

VOLUME VI.

OF THE

AUTHOR'S WORKS.

CONTAINING

The PUBLICK SPIRIT of the WHIGS; and other Pieces of Political Writings, &c. With POLITE CONVERSATION, &c.



Printed by and for George FAULKNER.

M, DCC, XXX, VIII.



.

....



THE

Publisher's PREFACE.

OST of the following Pieces have been printed in both Kingdoms with great Success: But as we were willing to comply with the earnest Request of our supposed Author's Friends, who assisted

in the Correcting, we thought proper to collect them into a Volume: We shall not say much of them here, as there are Advertisements prefixed to most of them. The Letters inserted in this Volume, show the high Esteem our Author is held in by the greatest Persons

in England, both for Learning and Quality.

The Remarks on the Barrier-Treaty, which should have followed the Conduct of the Allies, did not come to our Hands until we had printed Polite Conversation. These Remarks conclude this Volume: It was published at London in the Time of her late Majesty Queen ANNE, when that Treaty was universally disliked by those who were then at the Helm. The Author shews the ill Consequences it had upon the Trade and Dignity of England, which he proves from most of the Articles. Her Majesty's Ambassador was highly censured for his Partiality to the Dutch, by suffering the States to extend their Barrier, against the true Interest of his own Country.

THE

CONTENTS.

HE Publick Spirit of the Whigs. Pa	ge 1
A Preface to the B. of S's Introduction	n. 53
The Presbyterians Plea of Merit.	95
Some Advice to the Members of the October Club.	117
Considerations upon two Bills.	136
A Proposal for giving Badges to Beggars.	157
A new Simile for the Ladies.	173
An Answer to the said Poem.	181
A Letter to the Reverend Dr. Sh-n.	190
The Rev. Dr. Sh n to J. S. D. D. D. S. P. D.	
D-n S-'s Answer.	193
Mr. Pope to Dr. Swift.	195
Lord Bollingbroke to Dr. Swift.	198
From Dr. Swift to Mr. Pope.	202
From Mr. Pope to Dr. Swift.	205
From the Earl of Peterborough to Mr. Pope.	207
From the same.	208
From Dr. Swift to the Earl of Peterborough.	210
A Treatise on Polite Conversation.	213
The Interdesting	
A compleat Collection of genteel and ingenious Conversation.	249
Second Conversation.	302
Third Conversation.	334
Remarks on the Barrier Treaty.	345
[22] 이 사람들은 마다 이 경기 (10 전에 있었다] 사람들이 살아가 하는 사람들이 가는 사람들이 살아가는 것이 되었다.	HE



Her Royal Highness the Princess of ORANGE. His Serene Highness the Prince of ORANGE.

IGHT Hon. Earl of | Abingdon, 2 Setts. Earl of Arran Lari of Abercorn Countels of Abercorn Countels of Aylesford Lord Athunry Sir Arthur Acheson Bart. Sir Gerald Aylmer, Bart. Revd. Mr. Jo. Alcock, M. A. Mr. Alexander Alcock, A. B. Revd. Alexander Alcock, Dean of Lismore Mr. Christopher Anderson Henry Afton, Efq; Capt. Atkins Ilaac Ambrofe, Elq; Mr. James Arbuckle Mr James Arbuckle, M. A. Ald William Aldrich Samuel Arnoldi, Eiq; M. D. Mr. John Andrews John Averell, Eig; Mr. John Anderson, A. B. Thomas Amory, Elq; Mr. John Adamson, 6 Setts VOL. VI.

Mr. Peter Augier of Cashel Mr. William Atkins, A. B. Capt. Aldercron John Allen, Eiq; Revd. Mr. George Alcock Nicholas Aylward, Eiq; Samuel Auchmuty, Efq: Thomas Armstrong, Esq; Andrew Armstrong, Esq; Warniford Armstrong, Eig: Edward Armilrong, Elq: John Archer, Efq; Mr. Michael Archer Gilbert Affleck, Efq; William Acton, Elq; Revd. Mr. Humphry Adams. William Annefly, Eiq; IS Grace the Duke of Buckingham

I IS Grace the Duke of
Buckingham
Her Grace the Dutchess of
Buckingham
His Grace the Duke of Bedford
Rt. Hon. the Earl of Barrymore
Rt H. Lord Vis. Bolingbroke
Rt. H. Lord Visc. Buttevant

Kt.

Rt. Hon. Lord Vis. Boyne Rt. Hon. the Lord Boyle Rt. Hon. Lord Bellfield Rt. Hon. Lord Bathurst Rt. Hon. Lady Bateman Rt. Hon. Lady Buckley Rt Hon. Lady Anne Bligh His Excellency Henry Boyle, Eig; one of the Lords Juitices of Ireland. Rt. Hon. Francis Burton, Efq; Hon. John Bowes, Eig; Sollicitor General Ho Col Philip Bragg Ho. Col. James Butler. Fio John Berkely, Etq; Hon. Thomas Butler, Eig; Hon. Robert Butler, Elq; Hon. John Butler, Elq; Hon. Mrs. Bury Sir Orlando Bridgman, Bart. Sir Walter Dixon Boroughs, la Birmingham, Elq.; James Belcher, Elq; Samuel Barker, Eiq; Revd. Dean Brandreth, 5 Setts Dominick Browne, Elq; John Bolton, Esq; Mr. James Byrne Mrs. Charlotte Baldwin William Barter, Efq; Henry Bindon, Eig; Mrs. Gwen Bodville Revd. Mr. Benjamin Bacon, Archdeacon of Derry Thomas Burdet of London, Eq; Richard Barker, Efq: Rowland Bradtlock, Eig; Alderman Bennet of Cork 16 Setts Mr John Bagwell Richard Buckworth, of Cashel Mrs. Anne Buckworth, of dit.

John Buckworth of dit. Efg; John Burgeis of dit. Eig; ·M D Clement Barry, Elq; William Baifley, Elq; James Bryan, Big; Revd. Dr. Bradford Nath. Bland, Eig; L. L. D. Revd. Mr. Thomas Buckley, M. A. Revd. Mr. Thomas Bullen, MA. John Bourk of Lismore, Esq; John Browne, Efg; 10 Setts Dominick Browne of Mayfield, Elq; Dominick Browne of Brayfield, Elq; Michael Barry, Gent. John Beaumon, Gent. Doctor Edmond Barry Mis Mable Butler of Waterford. Ald John Barber, of London Bridges Baldwin, Elq; 6 Setts Mr. Chichelter Bolton Arthur Baldwin, Efq; Francis Bindon, Elq; Jacob Barlow, A. B. Mis. Elizabeth Burgh Mr. Robert Blakeney Captain James Barry Edward Barry, Elq; M. D. Thomas Bolton, Eig; M. D. John Baldwin, Etq; Brune Browne, Elq; Captain Bowles Mrs. Letitia Bushe Richard Butler of Ballinehinch, Samuel Barrington, Elq; Collector of Ennis Edward Bond, Eig; John Bonham, Eiq: Francis Blake, Eiq; Hon.

Hon. William Brabazon, Elg; Thomas Bourk:, Eig; Revd. John Blachford, John Blakeney, Efq; Samuel Buckley, of London, Efq; Mrs. Eliza Blake The Revd. Mr. Rob. Bligh Mrs. Mary Baggot Roger Bradshaw, Esq; Ignatius Blake, Eig; John Baldwin of Merridon, in Warwickshire, Eig; Thomas Bolton, Elq; Arthur Birt, Efq; Robert Boswell, Esq; Dr. Edmond Barry Richard Baldwin, Efq; Mrs. Barber John Berkely, Efq; George Bagnal, Eig; William Blair, Efq; Thomas Bacon, Efq; Mrs. Mira Barber John Bridges, Esq; Isham Baggs, Esq; David Bindon, Esq; Mrs. Elizabeth Blackall Revd. Mr. Geo. Blackburn Packenham Betty, Eigs 6 Setts Richard Bellew, Eiq; Nicholas Bellew, Elq; Jeremiah Browne Elq: Colonel John Beecher Aghadour Revd. Mr. Rich. Beauchamp Walter Bagnall, Efq; John Beauchamp, Eiq; Benjamin Beauchamp, Elq ; Revd. Mr. Bligh Mrs. Hanna Birch John Baker, Efq; 2 Setts Benjamin Burton, Efq;

Mr. Ryan Burton Mr. James Brunet Samnel Barret, Merchant in Cork. Thomas Baker of the Royal Hospital William Board Benjamin Barrington, M. A. 2 Setts Thomas Baker, Junior Thomas Blakeney William Bull Michael Bird of Drogheda, Efq: John Ball, Richard Burleigh Richard Burke Edward Barnwell John Bowles Constantine Barber, A. B. Bernard Broadbelt Charles Brett Charles Birch Thomas Blundell.

C

IIS Grace the Archbishop of Cashel, 6 Setts His Grace the Duke of Chan-Rt. Hon. Earl of Coventry Rt. Hon. Lord Vil. Charlemount Rt. Revd. Lord Bishop of Cork Rt. H. Ladv Carteret, 6 Setts Rt. Hon. Lord Caliledorough Rt. Hon. Lady Cobham Rt. Hon. Lady Catherlough Rt Ho Lady Anne Connolly Rt. Hon. Lady Mary Cooly Hon. Colonel Cecil Hon. John Caulfield, Efg; Right

Subscribers N A M E S.

Rt Hon Marmaduke Coghill, Eiq; Chancellor of the Exchequer Sir Richard Cox, Bart. Sir Maurice Crosby, Bart. Rt. Hon. Walter Carcy, Efq; 2 Setts Alexius Clayton of the Middle Temple, Esq; Mrs. Lydia Clements Thomas Copleston, Esq; Major Cleland Stratford Canning, Efq; The Revd. Mr. Michael Cox Nicholas Clintony, Efq; Valentine Cruise, Esq; M. D. Mrs. Cæsar of Binsield in Hertfordshire William Crookshanks, Esq; William Coats Jun. Elq; Mrs. Hanah Clements Anthony Charlton, Efq; The Revd. Mr. Cotterel, Dean of Raphoe William Champnies, Efq; Richard Cormick, Eq; Nath. Cole of London, E.fq; Francis Cowper of London, Elq: Revd. Mr. Walter Clarke, Revd. Mr. Adam Caulfield, 6 Setts Revd. William Chandler, L. L. D. Mrs. Mary Coghill William Crow of Naas, Efq; Mrs. Clayton Samuel Croker, Efq; Revd. Mr. Downs Conran Baldwin Crow, Elq; Revd. Mr. Ralph Cocking Robert Calaghan, Elq; Samuel Card, Eiq; 2 Setts Richard Carleton, Eiq;

Hon. Denny Cuffe, Efq; David Chaigneau, Esq; David Clarke, Efq; Revd. Mr. William Connei, Prebendary of Mayne, in the Diocese of Offory Revd Mr. Will. Crow, M. A. Richard Connelly, Esq; Revd. Mr. Henry Coughlan, M. A. George Cuppadge, Elq; Cæfar Colclough, Efq; Thomas Cuffe, Efq; Abraham Creighton, Efq; Henry Cope, Eiq; Miss Creighton Revd. Mr. Barclay Cope, Rector of Loughgall Tho. Downham Clarke, Elq; Thomas Carte, Eiq; Mrs. Elinor Carew Andrew Crotty, Elq; Mrs. Elizabeth Croker, Dixie Coddington, Elq; Edward Collingwood of London, Eig; Mis. Mary Cowper Lieut. Raphael Caulfield of the Hon. Col. Otway's Regiment. Stephen Cotterel, L. L. D. John Carr, Eiq; Collector of Loghrea Henry Colclough, Efq; John Coppinger, Elq, Mr. I dward Croker Nathaniel Card Samuel Card Edmond Comerford William Colthurft, Gent. William Clements, F. T. C. D. Charles Campbell of Trinity College Pat. Creigh, Merchant Mr.

Mr. William Chaigneau
Charles Coote, A. B.
Daniel Cooke, Mercht.
William Cromie, Merchant
Thomas Cowper
Henry Coddington
Matthew Carrick
Robert Clibborn, Mercht.

D

Ight Hon. Earl of Derby Right Hon. the Earl of Donnegall Right Hon. Countels of Donnegall Right Hon. Lord Duplin Right Hon. Lord Defert ames Daly, Elq; Robert Dillon, Efq; Revd. Mr. James Dalacourt M. A. Samuel Dalton Bookfeller Rev. Mr. Ro. Downes, M. A. Mrs. Rebecca Dingley Revd. Mr. Philip Downes, Rector of Favan, John Davies of the County of Donnegall, Esq; Mrs. Dillon John Duff of Belfast, Esq; Capt. Desbrifay, 6 Setts Mrs. Anne Drelincourt 2 Setts Revd. Dr. Delanv, 10 Setts Mrs. Delany, 2 Setts Revd. Mr. Donnellan, F. T. C. D. Mils Donellan Hugh Dickson, Esq; Revd. Mr. William Dunkin, M. A. Major Obrian Dilks Chappel Dawson, Elq; Lieut. Solomon Desbrilay Robert Doyne, Eq;

Mr. Anthony Mc. Dermott. Merchant John Mc. Dermott, Gent. Nehemiah Donnellan, Grange, Eiq; Mrs. Dobson, 6 Setts William Draycot, Eiq; The Revd. Mr. Joshua Davyfon, M. A. Mr. John Day, A. B. Samuel Davey Hugh Darley Robert Donovan, Merchant James Dawfon of Londonderry, 6 Setts Philip Den Matthew Dubourg John Dollard John Dexter Pat. Dowdall James Difney Walter Darcey, Mercht. Theo. Dillon, Mer. 3 Setts Paul Debell Dennis Delane Tho. Dillon, 6 Setts John Dicey, 12 Setts John Duff Mrs. Dopping Mrs. Sarah Dopping.

E
R Ight Hon. Earl of Egmont
Right Revd. Robert Lord
Bishop of Elphin, 6 Setts
Lady Clotilda Eustace
Hon. John Evans, Esq;
Richard Elsmere, Esq;
Mrs. Susannua Este
Henry Edgworth, Esq;
Revd. Mr. William Elwood,
Rector of Caldass
Rowland Eustace, Esq;
Robert Edgworth, Esq;
Thomas

Subscribers N A M E S.

Thomas Enery, Efq; Revd. Dr. Echlin Richard Edwards, Efq; Miss England Chetwode Eustace, Esq; Revd. Mr. James Edkins, M. A. John Evans, Efq; Richard Edwards, Gent. Major Cuthbert Ellison Revd. Dr. John Ellis Charles Echlin, Esq; Mr. Francis Elrington William Evelyn, A. B. Peter Edkins John Esdell, Face Painter Daniel Elwood, Mercht. Mr. Edgworth, F. T. C. D.

F

Ight Hon. E. of Fingall Right Hon. Countels of Fingall Rt. Hon. Lord Falkland Rt. Hon. Lady Effex Finch The Hon. Mrs. Fox Sir John Freke, Bart. Sir William Fownes, Bart. lames Farrel, Charles Ford of London, Elqrs. Arthur French, Thomas Farnaby Frederick Falkiner William Fownes John Forbes lames Fox Efqrs. Robert Fox George Fox Robert French Fhilip Fletcher, Elq; Surveyor-General of his Majesty's Revenue in Ireland, Jo. Fitz-Patrick, Elg: M. D.

Revd. Mr. Edward Ford, F. T. C. D. Geo. Fielding Anthony Forster Mark French William Forward Marcus French, Efq; Captain Fitz-Gerald The Revd. Arthur Foord, M. A. Mr. John Farrel, A. B. Joseph Fade, Jun. George Fletcher William Fitz Simons, Jun. Peter Frayne, M. D. Charles Franck Richard French, Druggist Festus Flin Mrs. Fitz-Herbert Elizabeth Forth Elizabeth Fitz-Gibbon Penelope Ford Elinor Fitz-Gerald

C

Ight Hon. Earl of Grandison Rt. Hon. Lord Gallway Hon. Lady Elizabeth Gore Sir Arthur Gore, Bart. Arthur Gore, Elq; Ralph Grattan, Revd. Mr M. A. 6 Setts Thomas Gonne, Efq; Town-Clerk of the City of Dub-Thomas Gibbings, Efq; 2 Setts Joseph Gascoyne of London, Eig; Revd. Mr. Robert Grattan 2 Setts Robert Gunning, Ela; R:

Subscribers N A M E S.

John Goodwin, Elq; Revd. Mr. William Godley Barnaby Gunning of the County of Rolcommon, Elq; Mits Anne Katharine Galbraith Capt. Gendrault John Galway, Esq; The Revd. Mr. John Gardner, of Hanbury Henry Giffard, Esq; one of the Patentees of Drury-Lane Theatre-Royal James Gibbs, Esq; Theophilus Glover, Efq; The Revd. Claudius Gilbert. D. D. and Vice-Provoft of T. C. D. Mr. Wood Gibson, M. A. F. T. C. D. James Gledstanes of the Midple, Esq; Barth. Wm. Gilbert, Efq; John Gore, Esq; Henry Gaven, Elq; Mrs. Hanna Gledstanes Revd. Mr. Patrick Grace, A. M. John Graham, Efq; Mrs. Anne Grove Mr. James Grattan, A. B. Jonathan Gerrard Ralph Gill, of T. C. D. Nuttle Greene Sheffield Grace Capt. John Grey.

IS G ace the Duke of Hamilton Her Grace the Dutcheis of Hamilton Rt. Hon. the Earl of Hunting-

Rt. Hon. Wm. Graham, Efq; | Rt. Hon. Lady Viscountes Harcourt Rt. Hon. Lord Howth Rt. Hon. Lady Howth Rt. Hon. Lady Archibald Hamilton Lady Hanmer Hon. Robert Hay Hon. Arthur Hill Efgrs. Hon. Tho Harvey Robert Hickman William Hamilton Hon. Governor Hart Mr. James Hington, A. B. T. C. D. Alderman Thomas Hughes of Cashel Alderman Arthur Hyde of Cashel Rev. Mr. Hudson, F. T. C. D. Revd. John Hickey Rich. Helsham, Esq; M. D. Rowley Hill Anthony Hickman Henry Hamilton Lorenzo Hodson Walter Harris, Efq; Counfellor at Law Lieut. David Hall of General Bisset's Regiment Edward Harley Thomas Harley Robert Harley Richard Harley Mils Hamilton, 2 Setts Leslie Hamilton, Eig; Isaac Holroyd, Elq; John Humphry, Elq: John Hay of Ballybithan in North-Britain, Elq: Thomas Harris, Elq; Mils Hamilton Mr. James Hickey Samuel Hales of Cork Edward Hendrick Non-

Newburgh Hamilton, Eig; The Revd Mr. Harbin Mr. Roger Hall, F. T. C. D. John Bernard Hoffsleger, Merchant Theophilus Harrison Tho. Hall, Mer. 6 Setts James Hartson Edmond Harrold Francis Healy of the City of Cork Tho. Hanly, Attorney Jo. Hopkins, 25 Setts John Higgins Christopher Harrison John Hay Edward Hendrick Mrs Hyde, 12 Anne Hackett Reddis Hamilton

I

Ight Hon. E. of Inchiquin Hon. Robert Jocelyn, Liq; his Majelly's Attorney General of Ireland. Matthew Jacob, Jun of Cashel, Elq; John Irwin, Walter Jones Efqrs. Bolton Jones Roger Jones Thomas Judge Revd. William Jones Revd. John Jebb, 3 Setts Revd. John Jackson Revd. Daniel Jackson Revd. Peter lackson Kiris Johnson kevd. Henry Jenny, D. D. Archiceacon of Ardmagh Daniel Jackton, A. M. 2 Setts Major William Jones L'acodore Jacobion, Elq:

Christopher Irwin, Esq;
Richard Johnson, Esq;
Revd Mr. Johnson
Gabriel Johnson, Esq;
Walter Jones, Surgeon
Mr. Daniel Jackson
John Johnson
Robert Jones, Mercht.
James Johnson
Robert Jones, Jun. Mer.
George Julian
Mrs. Johnson
Cathrina Isaac
Margaret Jeuers

K

IS Grace the Duke of Kent, 6 Setts. Rt. Hon. Lord Vife. Kingsland Rt. Revd. Lord Bishop of Killala Rt. Hon. Lord Kinfale Rt. Hon. Lord Kingston Rt. Hon. Lady Killmurry Rt. Hon. Lord Vife. Kenmare Rt. Hon. Sir Henry King, Bart. Hon. Henry Kenny George Knox Rich Kyffin of Cashel Mrs. Frances Arabeila Kelly. 2 Setts Rev. Dr King, S. F. T. C. D. John Kemp Efgrs. James Kennedy Keating King Bryan Kavanagh, Efq; Wm. Kelly of Ballinlais, Efq ; Maurice Keating, Eig; Edward Knatchbull, Efq; Rich. Henry Keating, Elq; The Revd Dr. Karney Capt. Dennis Kelly Hugh Kemplin, Eig; Edward

Edward Kean, E/q;
John Kennedy, E/q;
Thomas Keating, E/q;
Dennis Kelly, E/q;
Tho. Kingsbury, E/q; M D.
Revd. Mr. James King
Mr. Andrew Kennedy
William Knox, Merchant
in Bourdeaux
Thomas Kempston
Patrick Kelly, Surgeon
Revd. Mr. James King
Mrs. Elizabeth King

L

IS Grace the Duke of Leeds Rt. Hon. Earl of Litchfield Rt. Hon. Lord Vis. Lanesborough Rt. Hon. Lady Vis. Lanesborough Rt. Hon. Lady Vif. Lewisham Rt. Hon. Lord Lansdown Hon. Lady Long Hon. Sir Multon Lambard Sir Richard Levinge, Bart. Sir Berkly Lucy, Bart. William Longfield, Robert Leslie John Lyndon John Lee John Lovet Philip Lyons William Lennox John Locker of Lon- Efgrs. don Guitavus Lambert Hugh Lumly Daniel Lock William Lingen Thomas Lindsay Michael Leigh

Walter Lavit, E/q; Colly Lyons, E/q; L. L. D. Thomas Lumm of Lummville, E/q; James Lambard of Cregg. E/q; Henry Lefly, E/q; 6 Setts Revd. Edward Leigh, 2 Setts Revd. George Lloyd, M. A. Major Francis Ligonier George Lee, L. L. D. Capt. Robert Leaths Revd. Mr. Smyth Loftus Capt. Arthur Loftus Revd. Mr. John Lyon, 2 Setts Mr. Tho. Litton, T. C. D. Edward Lloyd James Lombard William Lyndon Alexandar Lynch Matthew Lynch David Lynch Glegg Lee of Wincham, in Cheshire Charles Lyon Boyle Lennox David La Touch James Diggs Latouche Mrs. Ludlow Mary Longfield Anne Longfield Mary Loftus

M

HIS Grace the Duke of Marlborough
Her Grace the Dutchess of Marlborough, 2 Setts
Rt. Hon. the Earl of Meath
Rt. H. Lord Visc. Mountjoy
Rt. H. Lady Visc. Mountcashel
Rt. H. Lady Vis. Mountcashel
Rt. H. Lady Vis. Mountcashel
Rt. Ho. Lord Vis. Molesworth
Rt.

Thomas Loftus, E/9;

Rt. Hon. Lord Viic. Mount Will. Magwire, E/q; 6 Setts George Mc. Cartney of Bel-Garret fait. Efq; Hon. Bushy Mansell, Ela: Hon. Justin Macarthy Ejq; Revd. Authory Mills James Moore of Ballyna, Esq; Hon. Capel Moore. Elq; George Matthew of Thomas-Sir Richard Meade, Bart Sir Randal Mc Donald, Bart. town, Eig; Sir Winwood Mowat, Bart. Revd. Edward Maurice Sif Charles Moore, Bart. Capt. John M'Quin, of the onas Morris Royal Scotch Robert Maxwell Robert Macoun, T C. D. Eland Moffom Nicholas Morris, Esq; of Edward Mead Mallohoyd John Moore Captain Thomas Montgomery Henry Mason Capt. Gilbert Mellifont Boyle Moore Revtl. Cha. Meredyth, Dean Mark Antony Morgan of Ardfert William Monsell Revd. Dr. Samuel Madden William Maynard Revd. Dr. Marly Boiton Madden Thomas Maunsell, Gent. lames Macmanus Capt. Morgan M'Donald Nicholas Mahon Revd John Moore, A. M. John Maxwell Revd. Edward Motley Charles Moore Mils Mahon Elgre. John Moniell Mr. Alexander Mason, F. T. Lewis Mears C. D. Thomas Matter Edward Martin Edward Moore Humphry Minchin Edward May Richard Moore Richard Matthews Charles Mears Robert Marshal Francis Mara Nicholas Meeburn Thomas Mead, Linnen-William Moore Draper Pool Molyneux Andrew Maurice of Gal-Alexander M'Auly way John Macarthy William Makenzie Richard Morgan Lewis Mears James Morris I hn Meares Thomas Morfe Arthur Rainay Maxwell Revd Dr. Jeremiah Marsh, Mrs. Jane Malone Dean of Killmore Sulannah Mason George Morley, Ejq; M. D. Anna Maria Moore Mrs. Macmullen Capt. Luke Mercer Alderman John Macarrel Anna Maria Macmanus Revd. Mr. Edward Molloy, Hie F. T. C. D.

Subscribers N A M E S.

IIS Grace the Duke of Norialk 4 Setts Her Grace the Dutcheis of ! Newcarle Rt. Hon. Lor | Vif. Netterville Rt. Hon. Lady Barbara North Henry Michalian John Nicolls Robert Nugent Christopher Nugent Adam Newman Richard Newman ames Nathanon Robert Norman Ligts. Francis North Michael Nugent Andrew Nugent Richard Nevill John Nugent of Coolamber James Ivugent of Nugentilown, Richard Nelson, Gent. Michael Nowlan, Gent. Captain Richard Nevill Revd. Andrew Nestit Mr. Ezekiel Nest it, A. B. Cairn Crais Nestit Giffard Neshit Richard Nestit Mrs. Newiterd Anne Nichols of London Margery Nesuit

O
TER Grace the Dutche's
of Ormand
Rt. Hon. Earl of Oxford, 26
Setts
Rt. Hon. Counte's of One ad
Rt. Hon. Earl of Orrary, to
Setts
Rt. Revd. Lord Bishop of
Offory, 2 Setts

Fion. James O'Bryan, E/9: Hoe. Mrs. Mary O'Bryan Hon. Mrs. Mery O'Hara Robert Giver, Eig; Roert Oliver, Jan Ejo; Charles O'Connor of Ballynagary, Gent Kran C Hara, Ffq; Licery O de, F/2; Manage O'Connor, E/7; Challes O'Gara, Ein. George Ode, Lg: Mis they O'llas, En; George Ormshy, Gent. Reva Thomas Orr, A. B. Mir. Heary Ochome 10 betts Herry Caburne Robert Owen Mrs. Joice Oughton Elizabeth Oborne

p

IS Grace the Duke of A Partland Her Grace the Dutchess of Portland Rt. Hon Lord Pailley R. Hen. Lady Pailley Rt. Hon Lady Philippa Prat Rt. Hon. Lady Frances Ponfon, y H n Col Richard Prot Sir Edward Lovet Pearce John Philpott, Eg; Royd. George Parie, A. M. William Palmer, Erg: ker? Matthew Palagton, 4. 11. Reed, Will. Pointney, A. M. Red. Air. Pelliter, F. T. C. D Thomas Parland, Eig: Tho. Prince of Canall, E.7; Pady Peca, 199, 6804 Crock-

Crockhill Perrot, E/q; Revd. George Palmer Henry Piere, Gent. Revd. Richard Parker, A. M. Charles Power, Efq; Thomas Prior, E/q; John Putland, E/q; Revd. Marm. Philips Henry Pye, E/q: Herbert Price, E/q; The Revd. Mr. Pearce Chaplain to the Rt. Hon. Lady Lechmere Laurence Parsons, Esq: Miss Pyne George Pipard, E/4; William Purcel, E/q; Revd. Kean Percival, A. M. Mr. Charles Percival, A. B. George Portis James Porter of London, Merchant Willoughby Perry Tho. Parnell, T. C. D. Mrs. Pilkington Mrs. Pendarves, 2 Setts Anne Plunket Anne Pearion Mis. Pretton

Q

HIS Grace the Duke of Queensbury Her Grace the Dutchess of Queensbury Capt. John Mc. Quin

R

Right Hon. Earl of Ross Right Hon. James Reynolds, Esq; Lord Chief Justice of his Majesty's Common Pleas

Sir William Ruffell, Bart. Sir John Rawden, Bart. Revd. Archdeacon Ruffell Revd. Jonathan Rogers, D. D. John Rochfort Patrick Ryan John Reily Jerom Ruffell, Christopher Rogers Elgrs. Arthur Rawdon William Richardson of Somerfeat Abel Ram, Jun-Lieut. William Ross Alder. John Roe of Cashell Revd. Will. Robertson, M. A. Miss Roe Bryan Robinson, Esq; M. D. Joseph Robins, Esq; Counsellor at Law Philip Ridgate, E/q; L. L. D. Edmund Ryan, E/q; John Ryan, Gent. Rev. Rich. Richardson, M. A. Rev. Southwell Ricard, Archdeacon of Cloyne Revd. Thomas Ruby, M. A. Mr. Robert Reeves William Read, T.C.D. John Roe, 3 Setts Mrs. Ridley Elizabeth Rowley Alice Rochfort Anne Richardion of Rich-Hill Anne Rogers

Somerset, 4 Setts
Rt. Hon. Earl of Strafford 22
Setts
Rt. Hon. Countes of Strafford
Rt. Hon. Earl of Scarsdale
Rt. Hon. Earl of Scarsdale
Rt.

Rt. Hon. Anthony Ashley Cowper, Earl of Shaftsbury Rt. Hon. Lord Santry Hon. Mrs. Staunton Hon. Mrs. St. Leger Sir Thomas Seabright, Bart. Sir Alexander Staples, Bart. Revd. John Smith, M. A. Revd. Dr. Thomas Sherridan, Owen Swiny Bearcliffe Stonehewer, of London Thomas Swaine, of London Stephen Sibthorp William Shirley Edmond Schouldham, Michael Sampson Deane Swift John Smith Robert Savage Thomas Spring Henry Stephens Margetson Saunders Richard Sandes, Crow-fireet Esqrs. Ward Smith of London John Sotheby Charles Sandford John Stratford William Stewart of the Middle-Temple Edmond Spencer John Sherridan Luke Standford George Shakerley of Guirfilt, Osborn Stratton Edward Smyth William Stewart Andrew Shepherd Revd. John Singleton Revd. Michael Symes, M. A. William Stephens, Ejq; M.D.

1 Revd. Thomas Smith, Archdeacon of Glandelough Revd. John Standish, M. A. Edwin Sandys, Gent. Revd. Richard Stewart Roger Shiel, Gent. Revd. James Stopford, 6 Setts Enoch Stern, E/q; L. L. D. Nicholas Staunton of Galway, E/q; Brent Smith, A. B. Lieut. Ventris Scot of General Biffet's Regiment Revd. Edward Shand, M. A. Revd. Henry Smyth, M. A. Major Philip Savage William Shiel, Gent. Revd. Samuel Simcocks Revd. David Stephens John Smyth, Gent. Revd. Dr. St. George Revd. Arthur Smith Mr. Stephen Stretch, Mer. Thomas Smith, Hatter William Swift, A. B. Frank Smith, of T. C. D. Hugh Stafford Thomas Sherlock James Sullevan Christian Swift, 6 Setts Henry Steel Robert Scriven Thomas Steele Colley Shaw Mrs. Swanton Margery Sadlier Jane Synge Anne Shuttleworth Sican

T

R Ight Hon. Earl of Thomond, 3 Setts Rt. Hon. Lord Tullamore Hon.

-Hon. Lady Tuite Hon. John Temple, E/q; Hon. Edward Thompson, Esq; one of the Commissioners of his Majesty's Revenue in Ireland Richard Trench Laurence Tool of the County of Wicklow Philip Tifdell Thomas Theaker of Richard Taylor Swords Richard Tennison Thomas Tench Elgrs. William Thornton John Taylor Samuel Towers Thomas Tench Charles Tisdell Richard Tickell John Taafe Theobald Taafe Berkely Taylor Revd. John Throp, M. A. Revd. John Taylor, L. L. D. Mils Tennison, 2 Setts Will. Taylor, Eig; 12 Setts Revd. Timothy Thomas Revd. Hugh Tifdell Revd. William Tifdell Mr. William Tyrrell John Tyrrell Edward Tottenham, T. C. D Philip Tuite John Trotter Mrs. Trenchard of Lytchet Maltravers in Dorsetshire Jane Tichburne Elizabeth Tennison Dorothy Tenniton

Ight Hon. Lord Viscount

Hon. Lady Vernon Hon. Mrs. Vane Thomas Upton, Efq; William Vefey, L. L. D. William Usher, E/9; Revd. Muschamp Vesey George Uther, Elq; Revd. William Ufher, Archdeacon of Clonfert Benjamin Victor, Ef John Vandeleur, Ffq; Henry Uther, Ejg; Revd. Mr. Vincent Mr. James Verailles, Mer. Mrs. Anne Vincent Melena Uniacke

W

Ight Hon. Earl of Winchelsea and Nottingham Rt. Hon. the Lord Vilcount Winter Rt. Hon. Lord Walpole Hon. Lieut. Col. Wright James Wilkinson Benjamin Woodward I ofeph Willfon Hugh Wilton Godfrey Wills lames Ware George Wakely Thomas Wakely Thomas Willion Nicholas Ward John Waller Elgrs. P. Walfh Robert Wills William Waller Thomas Wilkinson Nicholas Wogan James Weit Plunket Woodroffe Hunt Walih John White Samuel Warring

N:

Subscribers N A M E S.

Nicholas Weldon, Efq; Maurice Wale, E/q; Revd. John Walmslv, D. D. Cornet Wrath Watfon William Wray of Castle-wray, Revd. Sankey Winter, Dean of Kildare Capt. Daniel Webb Richard Weld, E/q; M. D. Samuel Waring, Gent. Revd. Rich. Weight, M. A. Revd John Wall, M. A. Revd. Samuel Whitchurch, M. A. 6 Setts Capt. Charles Ward, 6 Setts Revd. Mr. Walker John Wootton, Esq; principal Painter of the Houyhnmhms Revd Jeremiah Workman Revd. John Worral, B. D. Revd Dr. John Wynne Mr. Cornelius Wynne, 7 Setts Michael Wills John Ward Mark White Laurence White Hugh Warren John Whittingham, A. B. John Williams

Charles White
Michael Wale of Kakenny, Esq;
William Ward
Charles Weld
Jervis Westgate
John White of All-hollows
the Great, London.
Mrs. Whiteaway
Mrs. Woosley
Catherine Wesley
Rebecca Willington
Mrs. Wilkinson of Portsmouth,
7 Setts
Rebecca Wilkinson, dit.

X

MR. Ximenes

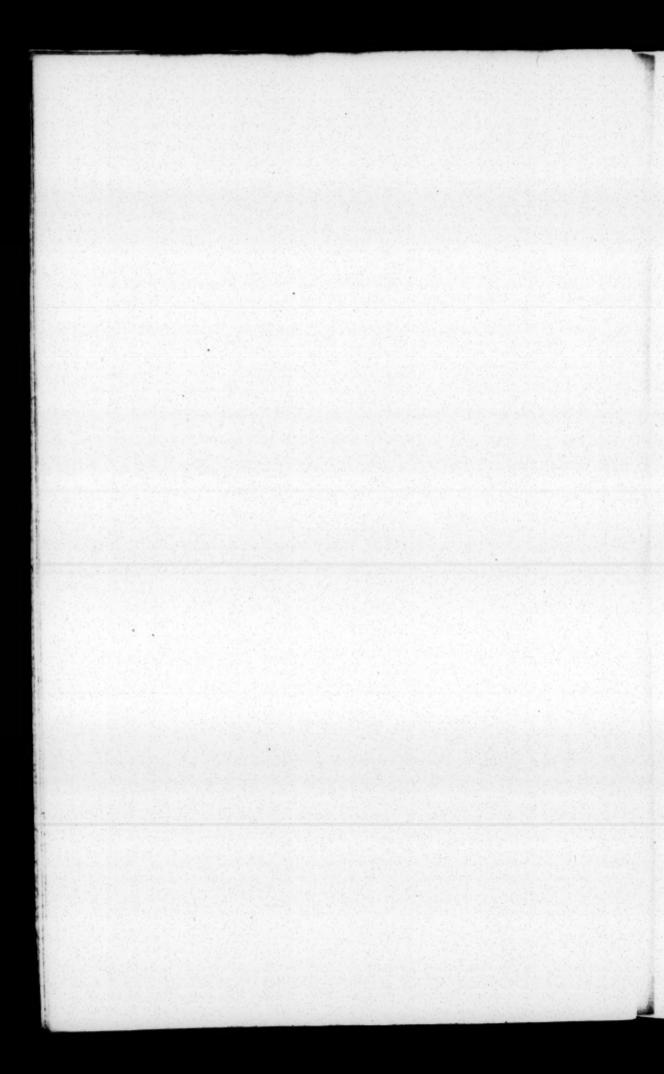
Y

R Evd. Lewis Hen. Young Mr. Abraham Yarner

 \mathbf{z}

MR. Zouch





THE

PUBLICK SPIRIT

OFTHE

WHIGS:

Set forth in their

Generous Encouragement

OFTHE

AUTHOR of the CRISIS.

WITH

Some OBSERVATIONS on the Seasonableness, Candor, Erudition, and Style of that Treatise.

Written in the Year 1712.

DUBLIN:

Printed by and for GEORGE FAULENER.

MDCCXXXVII.

VOL. VI.

B

ADVERTISEMENT.

To Pon the first Publication of this Pamphlet, all the Scotch Lords, then in London, went in a Body, and complained to Queen Anne of the Affront put on them and their Nation, by the Author of this Treatise. Whereupon a Proclamation was published by her Majesty, offering a Reward of Three hundred Pounds to discover him. The Reason for offering so small a Sum was, that the Queen and Ministry had no Desire to have our supposed Author taken into Custody.

THE

PUBLICK SPIRIT

OF THE

WHIGS, &c.

CANNOT without fome Envy, and a just Resentment against the opposite Conduct of others, reflect upon that Generolity and Tenderness, wherewith the Heads and principal Members of a struggling Faction treat those who will undertake to hold a Pen in their Defence. And the Behaviour of these Patrons is yet the more laudable, because the Benefits they confer are almost gratis: If any of their Labourers can scratch out a Pamphlet, they defire no more; there is no Question offered about the Wit, the Style, the Ar-Let a Pamphlet come out upon Demand in a proper Juncture, you shall be well and certainly paid; you shall be paid before-hand; every one of the Party who is able to read and can spare a Shilling shall be a Subscriber: Several thousands of each Production shall be fent among their Friends through the Kingdom: The Work shall be reported admirable, fublime, unanswerable; shall ferve to raise the finking Clamours, and confirm the Scandal of introducing Popery and the Pretender, upon the QUEEN and her Ministers,

B 2

AMONG

Among the present Writers on that Side, I can ecollect but three of any great Distinction, which are the Flying-Post, Mr. Dunton, and the Author of the Criss: The first of these seems to have been much funk in Reputation fince the fudden Retreat of the only true genuine original Author Mr. Ridpath, who is celebrated by the Dutch Gazeteer, as one of the best Pens in England. Mr. Dunton hath been longer and more conversant in Books than any of the three, as well as more voluminous in his Productions: However, having employed his Studies in to great a Variety of other Subjects, he hath, I think, but lately turned his Genius to Politicks, His famous Tract, intitled, Neck or Nothing, must be allowed to be the shrewdest Piece, and written with the most Spirit of any which hath appeared from that Side fince the Change of the Ministry: It is indeed a most cutting Satire upon the Lord Treasurer and Lord Bollingbroke, and I wonder none of our Friends ever undertook to answer it. I confefs I was at first of the same Opinion with several good Judges, who, from the Style and Manner Suppose it to have issued from the sharp Pen of the Earl of Nottingham; and I am still apt to think it might receive his Lordship's last Hand. Third and Principal of this Triumvirate is the Author of the Crisis; who, although he must yield to the Flying-Post in Knowledge of the World. and Skill in Politicks, and to Mr. Dunton in Keenness of Satire, and Variety of Reading; hath yet other Qualities enough to denominate him a Writer of a superior Class to either; provided he would a little regard the Propriety and Disposition of his Words, confult the Grammatical Part, and get fome Information in the Subject he intends to handle.

OMITTING the generous Countenance and Encouragement that have been shewn to the Persons and Productions of the two former Authors, I shall here only confider the great Favour conferred upon It hath been advertised for several Months in The Englishman, and other Papers, that a Pamphlet, called, The Crifis, should be published at a proper Time, in order to open the Eyes of the Nation. It was proposed to be printed by Subfcription, Price a Shilling. This was a little out of Form; because Subscriptions are usually begged only for Books of great Price, and fuch as are not likely to have a general Sale, Notice was likewife given of what this Pamphlet should contain; only an Excract from certain Acts of Parliament relating to the Succession, which at least must fink Ninepence in the Shilling, and leave but Three-pence for the Author's political Reflections; fo that nothing very wonderful or decifive could be reafonably expected from this Performance. But, a Work was to be done, a hearty Writer to be encouraged, and accordingly many thousand Copies were bespoke: Neither could this be fufficient; for when we expected to have our Bundles delivered us, all was flopt; the Friends to the Cause sprang a new Project, and it was advertised that the Crisis could not appear till the Ladies had shewn their Zeal against the Pretender, as well as the Men; against the Pretender in the Bloom of his Youth, reported to be handsome, and endued with an Understanding exactly of a Size to please the Sex. I should be glad to have feen a printed Lift of the fair Subscribers prefixed to this Pamphlet; by which the Chevalier might know he was fo far from pretending to a Monarchy here, that he could not fo much as pretend to a Mistress. AT

AT the destined Period, the first News we hear. is of a huge Train of Dukes, Earls, Viscounts, Barons, Knights, Esquires, Gentlemen, and others, going to Sam. Buckley's the Publisher of the Crisis, to fetch home their Cargoes, in order to transmit them by Dozens, Scores, and Hundreds, into the feveral Counties, and thereby to prepare the Wills and Understandings of their Friends against the approaching Seffions. Ask any of them whether they have read it? They will answer, No; but they have fent it every where, and it will do a World of Good: It is a Pamphlet, and a Pamphlet they hear against the Ministry; talks of Slavery, France, and the Pretender; they defire no more; it will fettle the Wavering, confirm the Doubtful, instruct the Ignorant, inflame the Clamorous, although it never be once looked into. I am told by those who are expert in the Trade, that the Author and Bookseller of this Twelve-peny Treatise, will be greater Gainers, than from one Edition of any Folio that hath been published these twenty Years. What needy Writer would not follicite to work under fuch Masters, who will pay us before-hand. take off as much of our Ware as we please at our own Rates, and trouble not themselves to examine either before or after they have bought it, whether it be staple or no?

But, in order to illustrate the implicite Munisicence of these noble Patrons, I cannot take a more effectual Method than by examining the Production it self; by which we shall easily find that it was never intended, further than from the Noise, the Bulk, and the Title of Criss, to do any Service to the factious Cause. The entire Piece consists of a Title Page, a Dedication to the Clergy, a Presace, an Extract from certain Acts of Farliament, and about ten Pages of dry Reflections on the Proceedings of the Queen and her Servants; which his Coadjutors, the Earl of Nottingham, Mr. Dunton, and the Flying Post, had long ago set before us in a

much clearer Light,

In Popish Countries, when some Impostor cries out, A Miracle! A Miracle! it is not done with a Hope or Intention of converting Hereticks, but confirming the deluded Vulgar in their Errors; and so the Cry goes round without examining into the Cheat. Thus the Whigs among us give about the Cry, A Pampblet! A Pampblet! The Criss! The Criss! not with a View of convincing their Adversaries, but to raise the Spirits of their Friends, recall their Stragglers, and unite their Numbers by Sound and Impudence; as Bees assemble and cling together by the Noise of Brass.

THAT, no other Effect could be imagined or hoped for, by the Publication of this timely Treatife, will be manifest, from some obvious Resections upon the several Parts of it; wherein the Follies, the Falshoods, or the Absurdities, appear so frequent, that they may boldly contend for Number

with the Lines.

When the Hawker holds this Pamphlet towards you, the first Words you perceive are, The Criss: Or, A Discourse, &c. The Interpreter of Suidas gives sour Translations of the Word Criss; any of which may be as properly applied to this Author's Letter to the Bailiss of Stockbridge. Next, what he calls A Discourse, consists only of two Pages, prefixed to twenty two more, which contain Extracts from Acts of Parliament; for as to the twelve last Pages, they are provided for by themselves in the Title under the Name of Some Seasonable Remarks on the Danger of a Popish Successor. Another

ther Circumstance worthy of our Information in the Title-Page, is, That the Crown hath been lettled by previous AEts. I never heard of any Act of Parliament that was not previous to what it enacted, unless those two by which the Earl of Strafford and Sir John Fenwick lost their Heads, may pals for Exceptions. A Discourse, representing from the most authentick Records. He hath borrowed this Expression from some Writer, who probably understood the Words, but this Gentleman hath altogether misapplied them; and under Favour, he is wholly mistaken; for a Heap of Extracts, from feveral Acts of Parliament, cannot be called a Discourse; neither do I believe, he copied them from the most authentick Records, which as I take it are lodged in the Tower, but out of some common printed Copy. I grant there is nothing material in all this, further than to shew the Generosity of our Adversaries in encouraging a Writer, who cannot furnish out so much as a Title-Page with Propriety or common Sense.

NEXT follows the Dedication to the Clergy of the Church of England, wherein the Modesty and the Meaning of the first Paragraphs are hardly to be matched. He tells them, he hath made a Comment upon the AEIs of Settlement, which he lays before them, and conjures them to recommend in their Writings and Discourses to their Fellow-Subjects; and he doeth all this, out of a just Descrence to their great Power and Influence. This is the right Whig-Scheme of directing the Clergy what to preach. The Archbishop of Canterbury's Jurisdiction extends no surther than over his own Province; but the Author of the Crisis, constitutes himself Vicar-General over the whole Clergy of the Church of England. The Bishops in their Letters or Speeches

to their own Clergy proceed no further than to Exbortation; but this Writer conjures the whole Clergy of the Church to recommend his Comment upon the Laws of the Land in their Writings and Discourses. I would fain know, who made him a Commentator upon the Laws of the Land; after which it will be time enough to ask him, by what Authority he directs the Clergy to recommend his Comments from the

Pulpit or the Prefs?

HE tells the Clergy there are two Circumstances which place the Minds of the People under their Direction; the first Circumstance is their Education; the fecond Circumstance is the Tenths of our Lands. This last, according to the Latin Phrase, is spoken ad invidiam; for he knows well enough, they have not a twentieth: But if you take it in his own Way, the Landlord has nine Parts in ten of the People's Minds under his Direction. Upon this Rock the Author before us is perpetually splitting, as often as he ventures out beyond the narrow Bounds of his Literature. He hath a confused Remembrance of Words fince he left the University, but hath loft half their Meaning, and puts them together with no Regard, except to their Cadence; as I remember a Fellow nailed up Maps in a Gentleman's Closet, fome fideling, others upfide down, the better to adjust them to the Pannels.

I AM sensible it is of little Consequence to their Cause, whether this Defender of it understand Grammar or no; and if what he would fain say, discovered him to be a Well-willer to Reason or Truth, I would be ready to make large Allowances. But when with great Difficulty I descry a Composition of Rancour and Falshood, intermixed with plausible Nonsense; I feel a Struggle between Contempt and Indignation, at seeing the Character

of a Censor, a Guardian, an Englishman, a Commentator on the Laws, an Instructor of the Clergy, assumed by a Child of Obscurity, without one single

Qualification to support them.

This Writer, who either affects, or is commanded of late to copy after the Bishop of Sarum, hath, out of the Pregnancy of his Invention, found out an old Way of infinuating the grossest Resections under the Appearances of Admonitions; and is so judicious a Follower of the Prelate, that he taxes the Clergy for instaming their People with Apprehensions of Danger to them and Their Constitution, from Men who are innocent of such Designs. When he must needs confess, the whole Design of his Pamphlet is to instame the People with Apprehensions of Danger from the present Ministry, whom we believe to be at least as innocent Men as the last.

WHAT shall I say to a Pamphlet, where the Malice and Falshood of every Line would require an Answer, and where the Dulness and Absurdities

will not deserve one?

By his pretending to have always maintained an inviolable Respect to the Clergy, he would insinuate, that those Papers among the Tatlers and Spectators, where the whole Order is abused, were not his own: I will appeal to all who know the Flatness of his Style, and the Barrenness of his Invention, whether he doth not grossy prevaricate? Was he ever able to walk without Leading-strings, or swim without Bladders, without being discovered by his hobbling and his sinking? Hath he adhered to his Character in his Paper called the Englishman, whereof he is allowed to be sole Author, without any Competition? What does he think of the Letter signed by himself, which relates to Molesworth.

of

in whose Defence, he affronts the whole Convoca-

It is a wife Maxim, that because the Clergy are no Civil Lawyers, they ought not to preach Obedience to Governors; and therefore they ought not to preach Temperance, because they are no Physicians: Examine all this Author's Writings, and then point me out a Divine who knoweth less of the Constitution of England than he; witness those many egregious Blunders in his late Papers, where

he pretended to dabble in the Subject.

But the Clergy have it feems imbibed their Notions of Power and Obedience abhorrent from our Laws, from the pompous Ideas of Imperial Greatness. and the Submission to absolute Emperors. gross Ignorance, below a School-boy in his Lucius Florus: The Roman History wherein Lads are instructed, reacheth little above eight hundred Years, and the Authors do every where inftil Republican Principles; and from the Account of nine in twelve of the first Emperors, we learn to have a Detestation a-The Greeks carry this Point yet gainst Tyranny. a great deal higher, which none can be ignorant of, who hath read or heard them quoted. This gave Hobbes the Occasion of advancing a Position directly contrary, That the Youth of England was corrupted in their political Principles, by reading the Histories of Rome and Greece, which having been writ under Republicks, taught the Readers to have ill Notions of Monarchy: In this Affertion there was fomething specious, but that advanced by the Criss could only iffue from the profoundest Ignorance.

But, would you know his Scheme of Education for young Gentlemen at the University? It is, that they should spend their Time in perusing those Acts

of Parliament, whereof his Pamphlet is an Extract; which, if it had been done, the Kingdom would not be in its present Condition, but every Member sen into the World thus instructed since the Revolution, would have been an Advocate for our Rights and Liberties.

HERE now is a Project for getting more Money by the Criss, to have it read by Tutors in the Universities. I thoroughly agree with him, that if our Students had been thus employed for twenty Years past, The Kingdom had not been in its present Condition. But, we have too many of such Proficients already among the young Nobility and Gen-try, who have gathered up their Politicks from Chocolate Houses, and factious Clubs, and who, if they had spent their Time in hard Study at Oxford or Cambridge, we might indeed have faid, that the factious Part of this Kingdom had not been in its present Condition, or have suffered themselves to be raught, that a few A&s of Parliament relating to the Succession are preferable to all other Civil Institutions whatfoever: Neither did I ever before hear, that an Act of Parliament relating to one particular Point could be called a Civil Institution.

HE spends almost a Quarto Page in telling the Clergy, that they will be certainly perjured if they bring in the *Pretender* whom they have abjured; and he wisely reminds them, that they have sworn without Equivocation or Mental-Reservation; otherwise the Clergy might think, that as soon as they received the *Pretender*, and turned *Papists*,

they would be free from their Oath.

This honest, civil, ingenious Gentleman, knows in his Conscience, that there are not ten Clergymen in England (except Non-jurors) who do not abhor the Thoughts of the Pretender reigning over us, much more than himself. But this is the Spittle of the

the Bishop of Sarum, which our Author licks up, and swallows, and then coughs out again, with an Addition of his own Phlegm. I would fain suppose the Body of the Clergy were to return an Answer by one of their Members to these worthy Counfellors: I conceive it might be in the following Terms.

My Lord and Gentleman,

The Clergy command me to give you Thanks for your Advice; and if they knew any Crimes from which either of you were as free, as they are from those which you so earnestly exhort them 6 to avoid, they would return your Favour as near as possible in the same Style and Manner. ever, that your Advice may not be wholly loft, e particularly that Part of it which relates to the · Pretender, they defire you would apply it to more proper Perfons. Look among your own Leaders: Examine which of them engaged in a · Plot to restore the late King James, and received · Pardons under his Seal; examine which of them · have been fince tampering with his pretended Son, and to gratify their Ambition, their Avae rice, their Malice and Revenge, are now willing to restore him at the Expence of the Religion and Liberty of their Country. Retire, good my Lord, with your Pupil, and let us hear no more of these hypocritical Infinuations, lest the QUEEN and Ministers, who have been hitherto content with only disappointing the lurking Villainies of ' your Faction, may be at last provoked to expose them.

But his Respect for the Clergy is such, that he doth not infinuate as if they really had these evil Dispo-

Dispositions; he only insinuates, that they give tod

much Cause for fuch Infinuations.

I WILL upon Occasion, strip some of his Insinuations from their Generality and Solecisms, and drag them into the Light. This Dedication to the Clergy is full of them, because here he endeayours to mold up his Rancor and Civility together; by which Constraint, he is obliged to shorten his Paragraphs, and to place them in fuch a Light, that they obscure one another. Supposing therefore. that I have scraped off his good Manners, in order to come at his Meaning which lies under; he tells the Clergy, that the Favour of the QUEEN and her Ministers, is but a Colour of Zeal towards them: That, the People were deluded by a groundless Cry of the Church's Danger at Sacheverell's Tryal; that, the Clergy, as they are Men of Sense and Honour, ought to preach this Truth to their feveral Congregations; and let them know, that the true Defign of the present Men in Power in that and all their Proceedings fince, in Favour of the Church. was to bring in Popery, France and the Pretender. and to enflave all Europe, contrary to the Laws of our Country, the Power of the Legislature, the Faith of Nations, and the Honour of God.

I CANNOT see, why the Clergy, as Men of Sense, and Men of Honour (for he appeals not to them as Men of Religion) should not be allowed to know when they are in Danger, and be able to guess whence it comes, and who are their Protectors. The Design of their Destruction indeed may have been projected in the dark; but when all was ripe, their Enemies proceeded to so many Overt-Acts in the Face of the Nation, that it was obvious to the meanest People, who wanted no other Motives to rouze them. On the other Side, can this Author.

or the wifest of his Faction, assign one single Act of the present Ministry, any way tending towards bringing in the Pretender, or to weaken the Succession of the House of Hanover? Observe then the Reasonableness of this Gentleman's Advice: The Clergy, the Gentry, and the common People had the utmost Apprehensions of Danger to the Church under the late Ministry; yet then it was the greatest Impiety to inflame the People with any such Apprehensions. His Danger of a Popish Successor from any Steps of the present Ministry, is an artificial Calumny raised and spread against the Conviction of the Inventors; pretended to be believed only by those who abhor the Constitution in Church and State; an obdurate Faction, who compass Heaven and Earth to restore themselves upon the Ruin of their Country; yet here our Author exborts the Clergy to preach up this imaginary Danger to their People, and diffurb the publick Peace with his strained seditious Comments.

But, how comes this gracious Licence to the Clergy from the Wbigs, to concern themselves with Politicks of any Sort, although it be only the Gloffes and Comments of Mr. Steele? Speeches of the Managers at Sacheverell's Tryal, particularly those of Stanbope, Lechmere, King, Parker, and some other, seemed to deliver a different Doctrine. Nay, this very Dedication complains of some in Holy Orders who have made the Constitution of their Country, (in which and the Coptick Mr. Steele is equally skilled) a very little Part of their Study, and yet made Obedience and Government the frequent Subjects of their Discourses. This Difficulty is easily solved; for, by Politicks, they mean Obedience. Mr. Hoadley, who is a Champion for Refistance, was never charged as medling QUC

out of his Function: Hugh Peters, and his Brethren, in the Times of Usurpation, had full Liberty to preach up Sedition and Rebellion; and so here Mr. Steele issues out his Licence to the Clergy to preach up the Danger of a Popish Pretender, in Desiance of the Queen and her Administration.

EVERY Whiffler in a laced Coat, who frequents the Chocolate House, and is able to spell the Title of a Pamphlet, shall talk of the Constitution with as much Plausibility as this very Solemn Writer, and with as good a Grace blame the Clergy for medling with Politicks, which they do not understand. I have known many of these able Politicians, surnished before they were of Age, with all the necessary Topicks of their Faction, and by the Help of about twenty Polysyllables capable of maintaining an Argument that would shine in the Criss; whose Author gathered up his little Stock from the same Schools, and hath writ from no other Fund.

But, after all, it is not clear to me, whether this Gentleman addresseth himself to the Clergy of England in general, or only to those very few. (hardly enough in Case of a Change to supply the Mortality of those Self-denying Prelates he celebrates) who are in his Principles, and among thefe, only fuch as live in and about London, which probably will reduce the Number to about half a dozen at most. I should incline to guess the latter; because he tells them they are surrounded by a learned, wealthy, knowing Gentry, who know with what Firmness, Self-denial, and Charity, the Bishops adhered to the publick Cause, and what Contumelies those Clergymen bave undergone, &c. who adhered to the Caufe of Truth: By those Terms, the publick Cause, and the Cause of Truth, he understands the Cause of the Whigs

Whigs in Opposition to the Queen and her Servants: Therefore by the learned, wealthy, and knowing Gentry, he must understand the Bank and East-India Company, and those other Merchants or Citizens within the Bills of Mortality, who have been strenuous against the Church and Crown, and whose Spirit of Faction hath lately got the better of their Interest. For, let him search all the rest of the Kingdom, he will find the surrounded Clergy, and the surrounding Gentry, wholly Strangers to the Merits of those Prelates; and adhering to a very different Cause of Truth, as will soon, I hope, be manifest by a fair Appeal to the Representatives of both.

IT was very unnecessary in this Writer to bespeak the Treatment of Contempt and Derision. which the Clergy are to expect from his Faction whenever they come into Power. I believe, that venerable Body is in very little Concern after what Manner their most mortal Enemies intend to treat them, whenever it shall please God for our Sins to visit us with so fatal an Event, which I hope it will be the united Endeavours both of Clergy and Laity to hinder. It would be fome Support to this Hope. if I could have any Opinion of his predicting Talent, (which fome have afcribed to People of this Author's Character) where he tells us, That Neife and Wrath will not always pass for Zeal. other Instances of Zeal has this Gentleman or the rest of his Party been able to produce? If Clamour be Noise, it is but opening our Ears to know from what Side it comes: And, if Sedition, Scurrility, Slander and Calumny, be the Fruits of Wrath, read the Pamphlets and Papers issuing from the Zealots of that Faction, or visit their Clubs and Corfee-Houses in order to form a Judgment of the Tree. VOL. VI.

WHEN Mr. Steele tells us, WE bave a Religion that wants no Support from the Enlargement of Secular Power, but is well supported by the Wisdom and Piety of its Preachers, and its own Native Truth; it would be good to know what Religion he profeffeth: For, the Clergy to whom he speaks, will never allow him a Member of the Church of England; they cannot agree, that the Truth of the Gofpel, and the Piety and Wisdom of its Preachers, are a fufficient Support in an Evil Age, against Infidelity, Faction, and Vice, without the Affistance of Secular Power; unless God would please to confer the Gift of Miracles on those who wait at the Altar. I believe, they venture to go a little further, and think, That upon fome Occasions, they want a little Enlargement of Assistance from the Secular Power, against Atheists, Deists, Socinians, and other Hereticks: Every first Sunday in Lent, a Part of the Liturgy is read to the People; in the Preface to which, the Church declares her Wishes for the Restoring of that Discipline she formerly had, and which for some Years past hath been more wanted than ever. But of this no more, left it might infinuate Jealousies between the Clergy and Laity, which, the Author tells us, is the Policy of vain ambitious Men among the former, in Hopes to derive from their Order, a Veneration they cannot deferve from their Virtue. If this be their Method for procuring Veneration, it is the most singular that ever was thought on; and the Clergy should then indeed have no more to do with Politicks of any Sort than Mr. Steele or his Faction will allow them.

HAVING thus toiled through his Dedication, I proceed to confider his Preface, which half confifting of Quotation, will be so much the sooner got through. It is a very unfair Thing in any Writer

Was

to employ his Ignorance and Malice together, because it gives his Answerer double Work: It is like the Sort of Sophistry that the Logicians call two Mediums, which are never allowed in the same Syllogism. A Writer with a weak Head, and a corrupted Heart, is an over-match for any single Pen; like a hireling Jade, dull and vicious, hardly able

to ftir, yet offering at every Turn to kick.

He begins his Preface with such an Account of the Original of Power, and the Nature of Civil Institutions, as I am confident was never once imagined by any Writer upon Government from Plato to Mr. Lock. Give me Leave to transcribe his first Paragraph. I never saw an unruly Crowd of People cool by Degrees into Temper, but it gave me an Idea of the Original of Power, and the Nature of Civil Institutions. One particular Man has usually in those Cases, from the Dignity of his Appearance, or other Qualities known or imagined by the Multitude, been received into sudden Favour and Authority, the Occasion of their Difference has been represented to him, and the Matter referred to his Decision.

I HAVE known a Poet, who never was out of England, introduce a Fact by Way of Simile, which could probably no where happen nearer than in the Plains of Libia; and begin with, So bave I feen. Such a Fiction I suppose may be justified by Poetical Licence; yet Virgil is much more modest: This Paragraph of Mr. Steele's, which he sets down as an Observation of his own, is a miserable mangled Translation of six Verses out of that samous Poet, who speaks after this Manner: As when a Sedition arises in a great Multitude, &c. Then if they see a wife grave Man, &c. Virgil, who lived but a little after the Ruin of the Roman Republick, where Seditions often happened, and the Force of Oratory

was great among the People, made Use of a Simile, which Mr. Steele turns into a Fact, after fuch a Manner, as if he had feen it an hundred Times; and builds upon it a System of the Origin of Govern-When the Vulgar here in England affemble in a riotous Manner, (which is not very frequent of late Years) the Prince takes a much more effectual Way than that of fending Orators to appeale them: But Mr. Steele imagines fuch a Crowd of People as this, where there is no Government at all; their Unruliness quelled, and their Passions cooled by a particular Man, whose great Qualities they had known Such an Affembly must have risen suddenly from the Earth, and the Man of Authority dropt from the Clouds; for without some previous Form of Government, no fuch Crowd did ever yet affemble, or could possibly be acquainted with the Merits and Dignity of any particular Man among But, to purfue his Scheme. This Man of Authority who cools the Crowd by Degrees, and to whom they all Appeal, must of Necessity prove either an open or claudestine Tyrant: A claudestine Tyrant I take to be a King of Brentford, who keeps his Army in Difguile; and whenever he happens either to die naturally, be knockt on the Head, or deposed, the People calmly take further Measures, and improve upon what was begun under his unlimit-All this, our Author tells us, with exed Power. treme Propriety, is what feems reasonable to common Sense; that is, in other Words, it seems reasonable to Reason. This is what he calls giving an Idea of the Original of Power, and the Nature of Civil Institutions. To which I answer with great Phlegm, that I defy any Man alive to shew me in double the Number of Lines, although writ by the same Author, fuch a complicated Ignorance in History, human

human Nature, or Politicks, as well as in the ordi-

nary Proprieties of Thought or of Style.

But, it feems, these profound Speculations were only premised to introduce some Quotations in Favour of Resistance. What hath Resistance to do with the Succession of the House of Hanover, that the Whig-Writers should perpetually affect to tag them together? I can conceive nothing elfe, but that their Hatred to the QUEEN and Ministry, puts them upon Thoughts of introducing the Successor by another Revolution. Are Cases of extream Necessity to be produced as common Maxims by which we are always to proceed? Should not thefe Gentlemen fometimes inculcate the general Rule of Obedience, and not always the Exception of Refistance? Since the former hath been the perpetual Dictates of all Laws both Divine and Civil, and

the latter is still in Dispute.

I SHALL meddle with none of the Paffages he cites, to prove the Lawfulness of resisting Princes, except that from the present Lord Chancellor's Speech, in Defence of Dr. Sacheverell: That there are extraordinary Cases, Cases of Necessity, which are implied although not expressed in the general Rule [of Obedience.] These Words, very clear in themfelves, Mr. Steele explains into Nonfense; which in any other Author I should suspect to have been intended as a Reflection upon as great a Person as ever filled or adorned that high Station: But I am fo well acquainted with his Pen, that I much more wonder how it can trace out a true Quotation than To fee him treat my Lord a false Comment. Harcourt with fo much Civility looks indeed a lit cle suspicious, and, as if he had Malice in his Heart. He calls his Lordship, a very great Man, and a great living Authority, places him in Company with

General Stanbope and Mr. Hoadley; and in short, takes the most effectual Method in his Power of ruining his Lordship in the Opinion of every Man who is wife or good: I can only tell my Lord Harcourt, for his Comfort, that these Praises are encumbred with the Doctrine of Resistance, and the true Revolution-Principles; and provided he will not allow Mr. Steele for his Commentator, he may hope to recover the Honour of being libelled again, as well as his Sovereign and Fellow-Servants.

WE now come to the Crisis: Where we meet with two Pages by Way of Introduction to those Extracts from Acts of Parliament that constitute the Body of his Pamphlet. This Introduction begins with a Definition of Liberty, and then proceeds in a Panegyrick upon that great Bleffing; his Panegyrick is made up of half a dozen Shreds, like a School-Boy's Theme, beaten, general Topicks, where any other Man alive might wander fecurely ; but this Politician, by venturing to vary the good old Phrases, and give them a new Turn, commits an hundred Solecisms and Absurdities. The weighty Truths which he endeavours to press upon his Reader are fuch as these. That, Liberty is a very good Thing; that, without Liberty we cannot be free; that, Health is good, and Strength is good, but Liberty is better iban either; that, no Man can be bappy, without the Liberty of doing whatever his own Mind tells bim is best; that, Men of Quality love Liberty, and common People love Liberty; even Women and Children love Liberty; and you cannot please them better than by letting them do what they please. Had Mr. Steele contented himself to deliver these and the like Maxims in such intelligible Terms, I could have found where we agreed and where

where we differed. But, let us hear some of these Axioms as he hath involved them. We cannot posfess our Souls with Pleasure and Satisfaction except we preserve to our selves that inestimable Blessing which we call Liberty: By Liberty, I desire to be understood, to mean the Happiness of Men's living, &c .---- The true Life of Man confifts in conducting it according to bis own just Sentiments and innocent Inclinations .----Man's Being is degraded below that of a free Agent, when his Affections and Passions are no longer governed by the Distates of his own Mind .--- Without Liberty, or Health (among other Things) may be at the Will of a Tyrant, employed to our own Ruin and that of our Fellow Creatures. If there be any of these Maxims, which is not grofly defective in Truth, in Sense, or in Grammar, I will allow them to pass for uncontroulable. By the first, omitting the Pedantry of the whole Expression, there are not above one or two Nations in the World, where any one Man can possess bis Soul with Pleasure and Satisfaction. In the second, He desires to be understood to mean; that is, he desires to be meant to mean, or to be understood to understand. In the third, The Life of Man confifts in conducting his Life. In the fourth, he affirms, That Men's Beings are degraded when their Passions are no longer governed by the Distates of their own Mind; directly contrary to the Lessons of all Moralists and Legislators; who agree unanimously, that the Passions of Men must be under the Government of Reason and Law; neither are Laws of any other Use than to correct the Irregularity of our Affections. By the laft, Our Health is ruinous to our selves and other Men, when a Tyrant pleases; which I leave him to make out.

I CANNOT sufficiently commend our Ancestors for transmitting to us the Blessing of Liberty; yet

having laid out their Blood and Treasure upon the Purchase, I do not see how they acted Parsimoniously; because I can conceive nothing more generous than that of employing our Blood and Treasure for the Service of others. But I am suddenly struck with the Thought, that I have found his Meaning: Our Ancestors acted Parsimoniously, because they only spent their own Treasure for the Good of their Posterity; whereas, we squandered away the Treasures of our Posterity too; but whether they will be thankful, and think it was done for the Preservation of their Liberty must be left to themselves for a Decision.

I VERILY believe, although I could not prove it in Westminster-Hall before a Lord Chief Justice, that by Enemies to our Constitution, and Enemies to our present Establishment, Mr. Steele would desire to be understood to mean, My Lord Treasurer, and the rest of the Ministry: By those who are grown Supine in Proportion to the Danger to which our Liberty is every Day more exposed, I should guess, he means the Tories : And, by bones Men who ought to look up with a Spirit that becomes bonefty, he understands the Whigs. I likewise believe, he would take it ill, or think me stupid, if I did not thus expound him. I fay then, that according to this Exposition, the four great Officers of State, together with the rest of the Cabinet-Council, (except the Archbishop of Canterbury) are Enemies to our Establishment, making artful and open Attacks upon our Constitution, and are now tradlifing indirect Arts, and mean Subtilties, to weaken the Security of those Ass of Parliament for settling the Succession in the House of Hanover. The first, and most notorious of these Criminals is, Robert Harley, Earl of Oxford, Lord High Treasurer, who is reputed to be Chief

Chief Minister: The second is, James Butler, Duke of Ormonde, who commands the Army, and defigns to employ it in bringing over the Pretender: The third is, Henry St. John, Lord Viscount Bolingbroke, Secretary of State, who must be supposed to hold a constant Correspondence with the Court at Bar le Duc, as the late Earl of Godolphin did with that of St. Germains: And to avoid Tediousness, Mr. Bromley and the rest are employed in their several Districts to the same End. These are the Opinions which Mr. Steele and his Faction, under the Direction of their Leaders, are endeavouring with all their Might to propagate among the People of England, concerning the prefent Ministry; with what Refervation to the Honour, Wisdom, or Juflice of the QUEEN, I cannot determine; who by her own free Choice, after long Experience of their Abilities and Integrity, and in Compliance to the general Wishes of her People, called them to her Service. Such an Accufation, against Persons in fo high Truft, should require, I think at least, one fingle Overt-Act to make it good. If there be no other Choice of Persons fit to serve the Crown without Danger from the Pretender, except among those who are called the Whig Party, the Hanover Succession is then indeed in a very desperate State; that illustrious Family will have almost nine in ten of the Kingdom against it, and those principally of the Landed Interest, which is most to be depended upon in fuch a Nation as ours.

I HAVE now got as far as his Extracts, which I shall not be at the Pains of comparing with the Originals, but suppose he hath got them fairly transcribed: I only think, that whoever is Patentee for printing Acts of Parliament, may have a very fair

Action

Action against him, for Invasion of Property : But

this is none of my Business to enquire into.

AFTER two and twenty Pages spent in reciting Acts of Parliament, be desires Leave to repeat the History and Progress of the Union; upon which I

have some few Things to observe.

This Work, he tells us, was unsuccessfully attempted by feveral of her Majesty's Predecessors; although I* do not remember it was ever thought on by any except King James the First, and the late King I have read indeed, that fome small O-William. vertures were made by the former of these Princes towards an Union between the two Kingdoms, but rejected with Indignation and Contempt by the English: And the Historian tells us, that how degenerate and corrupt foever the Court and Parliament then were, they would not give Ear to fo infamous a Proposal. I do not find that any of the fucceeding Princes before the Revolution ever refumed the Defign; because it was a Project for which there could not possibly be assigned the least Reason or Necessity: For I defy any Mortal to name one fingle Advantage that England could ever expect from fuch an Union.

But towards the End of the late King's Reign, upon Apprehension of the Want of Issue from him or the Princess Anne, a Proposition for uniting both Kingdoms was begun, because Scotland had not settled their Crown upon the House of Hancwer, but lest themselves at large, in hopes to make their Advantage: And, it was thought highly dangerous to leave that Part of the Island inhabited by a poor, sierce Northern People, at Liberty to put themselves under a different King. However, the

Opposition

^{*} The Anthor's Memory failed bim & little in this Affortion, as one of his Answerers observed.

Opposition to this Work was so great, that it could not be overcome until fome Time after her present Majesty came to the Crown; when by the Weakness or Corruption of a certain Minister since dead, an Act of Parliament was obtained for the Scots, which gave them leave to arm themselves; and so the Union became necessary, not for any actual Good it could possibly do us, but to avoid a probable Evil; and, at the same time, save an obnoxious Minister's Head, who was fo wife, as to take the first Opportunity of procuring a general Pardon by Act of Parliament, because he could not with so much Decency or Safety defire a particular one for himfelf. Thefe Facts are well enough known to the whole Kingdom: And, I remember, discoursing above fix Years ago with the most considerable * Person of the adverse Party, and a great Promoter of the Union, he frankly owned to me, That this Neceffity, brought upon us by the wrong Management of the Earl of Godolphin, was the only Caufe of the Union.

THEREFORE I am ready to grant two Points to the Author of the Criss: First, that the Union became necessary for the Cause above related; because it prevented this Island from being governed by two Kings, which England would never have suffered; and it might probably have cost us a War of a Year or two, to reduce the Scots. Secondly, that it would be dangerous to break this Union, at least in this Juncture, while there is a Pretender abroad, who might probably lay hold of such an Opportunity. And this made me wonder a little at the Spirit of Faction last Summer among some People, who having been the great Promoters of the Union, and several of them the principal Gainers by it,

could yet proceed so far, as to propose in the House of Lords, that it should be dissolved; while at the same time, those Peers who had ever opposed it in the Beginning, were then for preserving it upon the Reason I have just assigned, and which the Author of the Criss hath likewise taken Notice of.

Bur, when he tells us, The Englishmen ought in Generofity to be more particularly careful in preferving this Union. He argues like himself. The late Kingdom of Scotland (faith he) bad as numerous a Nobility as England, &c. They had indeed; and to that we owe one of the great and necessary Evils of the Union upon the Foot it now stands. Their Nobility is indeed fo numerous, that the whole Revenues of their Country would be hardly able to maintain them according to the Dignity of their Titles; and what is infinitely worfe, they are never likely to be extinct until the last Period of all Things; because the greatest Part of them descend to Heirs general. I imagine, a Person of Quality prevailed on to marry a Woman much his inferior, and without a Great to her Fortune, and her Friends arguing, she was as good as her Husband, because The brought him as numerous a Family of Relations and Servants, as the found in his House. Scotland in the Taxes is obliged to contribute one Penny for every forty Pence laid upon England; and the Representatives they fend to Parliament are about a thirteenth: Every other Scotch Peer hath all the Priviledges of an English one, except that of fitting in Parliament, and even Precedence before all of the same Title that shall be created for the Time to come. The Penfions and Employments coffessed by the Natives of that Country now among us, do amount to more than the whole Body

dy of their Nobility ever spent at home; and all the Money they raise upon the Publick is hardly sufficient to defray their Civil and Military Lists. I could point out some with great Titles, who affected to appear very vigorous for dissolving the Union, although their whole Revenues before that Period would have ill maintained a Welch Justice of the Peace; and have since gathered more Money than ever any Scotchman, who had not travelled, could form an Idea of.

I HAVE only one thing more to fay upon Occafion of the Union Act; which is, that the Author of the Crifis may be fairly proved from his own Citations to be guilty of HIGH TREASON. In a Paper of his called the Englishman, of October 29, there is an Advertisement about taking in Subscriptions for printing the Crisis, where the Title is published at length, with the following Clause, which the Author thought fit to drop in the Publication; [And that no Power on Earth can bar, alter, or make void the present Settlement of the Crown, &c. By Richard Steele.] In his Extract of an Act of Parliament made fince the Union, it appears to be High Treason for any Person, by Writing or Printing, to maintain and affirm, that the Kings or Queens of this Realm, with and by the Authority of Parliament, are not able to make Laws and Statutes of Sufficient Force and Validity to limit and bind the Crown, and the Descent, Limitation, Inheritance, and Government thereof. Act being subsequent to the Settlement of the Crown confirmed at the Union; it is probable, fome Friend of the Author advised him to leave out thole treasonable Words in the printed Title Page, which he had before published in the Advertisment; and accordingly we find; that in the Treatife it felf, he only offers it to every good Subject's Confideration,

ration, whether this Article of the Settlement of the Crown is not as firm as the Union it self, and as the Settlement of Episcopacy in England, &c. And he thinks the Scots understood it so, that the Succession to the Crown was never to be controverted.

THESE I take to be only treasonable Infinuations; but the Advertisement above-mentioned is actually High-Treason, for which the Author ought to be prosecuted, if that would avail any thing, under a Jurisdiction where cursing the QUEEN is

not above the Penalty of twenty Marks.

Nothing is more notorious, than that the Whigs of late Years, both in their Writings and Discourses, have affected upon all Occasions to allow the Legitimacy of the Pretender: This makes me a little wonder to fee our Author labouring to prove the contrary, by producing all the popular Chat of those Times, and other folid Arguments from Fuller's Narrative: But, it must be supposed, that this Gentleman acts by the Commands of his Superiors, who have thought fit at this Juncture to iffue out new Orders for Reasons best known to themselves. I wish they had been more clear in their Directions to him upon that weighty Point, whether the Settlement of the Succession in the House of Hanover be alterable or no: I have obferved where in his former Pages he gives it in the Negative; but in the turning of a Leaf he hath wholly changed his Mind; He tells us, He wonders there can be found any Briton weak enough to contend against a Power in their own Nation which is practised in a much greater Degree in other States: And, bow bard it is, that Britain should be debarred the Priviledge of establishing its own Security, by relinquishing only those Branches of the Royal Line which threaten at with Destruction; whilft other Nations never scruple supon

upon less Occasions to go much greater Lengths; of which he produceth Instances in France, Spain, Sicily, and Sardinia; and then adds, Can Great Britain belp to advance Men to other Thrones, and have no Power in limiting its own? How can a Senator, capable of doing Honour to Sir Thomas Hanmer, be guilty of fuch ridiculous Inconfiftencies? The Author of the Conduct of the Allies (fays he) bath dared to drop Infinuations about altering the Succession. The Author of the Conduct of the Allies writes Sense and English, neither of which the Author of the Crisis understands: The former thinks it wrong in Point of Policy to call in a Foreign Power to be Guarantee of our Succession, because it puts it out of the Power of our own Legislature to change our Succession without the Consent of that Prince or State who is Guaranty, whatever Necessity may happen in future Times. Now, if it be High Tteason to affirm by Writing that the Legislature hath no such Power > and if Mr. Steele thinks it strange that Britain should be debarred this Priviledge; what could be the Crime of putting fuch a Case, that in future Ages, a Necessity might happen of limitting the Succession, as well as it hath happened already?

When Mr. Steele reflects upon the many solemn strong Barriers (to our Succession) of Laws and Oaths, &c. he thinks all Fear vanisheth before them. I think so too; provided the Epithet solemn goes for nothing: Because, although I have often heard of a solemn Day, a solemn Feast, and a solemn Coxcomb, yet I can conceive no Idea to my self of a solemn Barrier. However, be that as it will; his Thoughts, it seems, will not let him rest, but before he is aware, he asks himself several Questions: And since he cannot resolve them, I will endeavour to give him what Satisfaction I am able. The first is,

What are the Marks of a lasting Security? To which I answer, that the Sign of it in a Kingdom or State are first, good Laws; and secondly those Laws well executed: We are pretty well provided with the former, but extremely defective in the lat-Secondly, What are our Tempers and our Hearts at Home? If by ours he means those of himfelf and his Abettors, they are most damnably wicked; impatient for the Death of the QUEEN; ready to gratify their Ambition and Revenge by all defperate Methods; wholly alienate from Truth, Law, Religion, Mercy, Conscience, or Honour. Thirdly, In what Hands is Power lodged Abroad? To answer the Question naturally, Louis XIV. is King of France, Philip V. (by the Councils and Acknowledgments of the Whigs) is King of Spain; and fo on. If by Power he means Money; the Duke of Marlborough is thought to have more ready Money than all the Kings of Christendom together; but, by the peculiar Disposition of Providence, it is locked up in a Trunk, to which his Ambition hath no Key; and that is our Security. Fourthly, Are our unnatural Divisions our Strength? I think not: but they are the Sign of it; for, being unnatural, they cannot last; and this shews, that Union, the Foundation of all Strength, is more agreeable to our Nature. Fifthly, Is it nothing to us, which of the Princes of Europe has the longest Sword? Not much, if we can tie up his Hands, or put a strong Shield into those of his Neighbours: Or, if our Sword be as Sharp, as his is Long: Or if it be neceffary for him to turn his own Sword into a Plow-Thare: Or, if fuch a Sword happeneth to be in the Hands of an Infant, or struggled for by two Competitors. Sixthly, The powerful Hand that deals out Crowns and Kingdoms all around us, may it not in Time

Time reach a King out to us too? If the powerful Hand he means, be that of France, it may reach out as many Kings as it pleafeth, but we will not accept them. Whence does this Man get his Intelligence: I should think, even his Brother Ridpath might furnish him with better. What Crowns or Kingdoms hath France dealt about? Spain was given by the Will of the former King, in Confequence of that infamous Treaty of Partition, the Adviser of which, will, I hope, never be forgot in England. Sicily was disposed of by her Majesty of Great Britain. So in Effect was Sardinia. France indeed once reached out a King to Poland, but the People would not receive him. This Question of Mr. Steele's was therefore only put in terrorem, without any Regard to Truth. Seventhly, Are there no Pretensions to our Crown that can ever be revived? There may for ought I know be about a Dozen: And those in Time may possibly beget a Hundred. But we must do as well as we can: Captain Bessus, when he had fifty Challenges to answer, protested he could not fight above three Duels a Day. the Pretender should fail (says the Writer) the French King bas in bis Quiver a Succession of them, the Dutchess of Savoy, or her Sons, or the Dauphin her Grandson. Let me suppose the Chevalier de St. George to be dead; the Dutchess of Savoy will then be a Pretender, and confequently must leave her Husband, because his Royal Highness (for Mr. Steele has not yet acknowledged him for a King) is in Alliance with her British Majesty: Her Sons, when they grow Pretenders, must undergo the same Fate. But I am at a Loss how to dispose of the Dauphin, if he happen to be King of France before the Pretendership to Britain falls to his Share; for I doubt he will never be perfuaded to remove out ct VOL. VI.

of his own Kingdom, only because it is too near

England.

But the Duke of Savoy did some Years ago put in bis Claim to the Crown of England in Right of his Wife; and be is a Prince of great Capacity; in Strict Alliance with France, and may therefore very well add to our Fears of a Popish Successor. Is it the Fault of the present, or of any Ministry, that this Prince put in his Claim? Must we give him Opium to destroy his Capacity? Or can we prevent his Alliance with any Prince who is in Peace with her Majefty? Must we fend to stab or poison all the Poriffs Princes who have any pretended Title to our Crown by the Proximity of Blood? What, in the Name of Gop, can these People drive at? What is it they demand? Suppose the present Dauphin were now a Man, and King of France, and next Popil Heir to the Crown of England; is he not excluded by the Laws of the Land? But what Regard will he have to our Laws? I anfwer; hath not the QUEEN as good a Title to the Crown of France? And how is she excluded but by their Law against the Succession of Females. which we are not bound to acknowledge? And is it not in our Power to exclude Female Successors as well as in theirs? If fuch a Pretence shall prove the Cause of a War, what human Power can prevent it? But our Cause must necessarily be good and righteous; for either the Kings of England have been unjustly kept out of the Possession of France, or the Dauphin, although nearest of Kin. can have no legal Title to England. And he must be an ill Prince indeed, who will not have the Hearts and Hands of ninety nine in a Hundred among his Subjects against such a Popish Pretender. I

War,

I HAVE been the longer in answering the seventh Question, because it led me to consider all he had afterwards to say upon the Subject of the Pretender. Eighthly and Lastly, he asks himself whether Poperry and Ambition are become tame and quiet Neighbours? In this I can give him no Satisfaction, because I never was in that Street where they live; nor do I converse with any of their Friends; only I find they are Persons of a very evil Reputation. But I am told for certain, that Ambition hath removed her Lodging, and lives the very next Door to Faction; where, they keep such a Racket, that the whole Parish is disturbed, and every Night in an Uproar.

Thus much in Answer to those eight uneasy Questions, put by the Author to himself, in order to satisfy every Briton, and give him an Occasion of taking an impartial View of the Affairs of Europe in general, as well as of Great Britain in particular.

AFTER enumerating the great Actions of the Confederate Armies under the Command of Prince Eugene, and the Duke of Marlborough, Mr. Steele observes in the Bitterness of his Soul, that the British General, however unaccountable it may be to Posterity, was not permitted to enjoy the Fruits of his Ten Years Fruits it feems were glorious Labour. not fufficient, and yet they were the fruitfullest Campaigns that ever any General cropt. However, I cannot but hope, that Posterity will not be left in the dark, but some Care taken both of her Majesty's Glory, and of the Reputation of those she employs. An impartial Historian may tell the World (and the next Age will eafily believe what it continues to feel) that the Avarice and Ambition of a few factious infolent Subjects, had almost destroyed their Country, by continuing a ruinous

War, in Conjunction with Allies, for whose Sakes principally we fought, who refused to bear their just Proportion of the Charge, and were connived at in their Refusal for private Ends. That, these factious People treated the best and kindest of Sovereigns with Infolence, Cruelty and Ingratitude (of which he will be able to produce feveral Inflances.) That, they encouraged Persons and Principles alien from our Religion and Government, in order to strengthen their Faction. He will tell the Reasons why the General and first Minister were feduced to be Heads of this Faction, contrary to the Opinions they had always professed. an Historian will shew many Reasons which made it necessary to remove the General and his Friends, who knowing the Bent of the Nation were against them, expected to lofe their Power when the War was at an End. Particularly, the Historian will discover the whole Intrigue of the Duke of Marlborough's endeavouring to procure a Commission to be General for Life; wherein Justice will be done to a Person at that Time of high Station in the Law; who, (I mention it to his Honour) advised the Duke, when he was confulted upon it, not to accept of fuch a Commission. By these, and many other Inftances which Time will bring to Light, it may perhaps appear not very unaccountable to Posterity, why this great Man was dismissed at last; but rather why he was difmiffed no fooner.

But this is entring into a wide Field. I shall therefore leave Posterity to the Information of better Historians than the Author of the Criss, or my self; and go on to inform the present Age in some Facts, which this great Orator and Politician thinks sit to misrepresent with the utmost Degree either of natural or wilful Ignorance. He afferts, that in

the Duke of Ormonde's Campaign, after a Suspension of Arms between Great Britain and France, proclaimed at the Head of the Armies, the British in the midst of the Enemies Garrisons, withdrew themselves from their Confederates. The Fact is directly otherwise; for the British Troops were most infamously deferted by the Confederates, after all that could be urged by the Duke of Ormonde, and the Earl of Strafford, to press the Confederate Generals not to forfake them. The Duke was directed to avoid engaging in any Action until he had further Orders, because an Account of the King of Spain's Renunciation was every Day expected: This the Imperialists and Dutch knew well enough, and therefore proposed to the Duke in that very Juncture to engage the French, for no other Reason but to render desperate all the QUEEN'S Measures towards a Peace. Was not the certain Possession of Dunkirk of equal Advantage to the uncertainty of a Battle? A whole Campaign under the Duke of Marlborough, with fuch an Acquisition, although at the Cost of many thousand Lives, and several Million, of Money, would have been thought very glori oufly Ended. Neither after all, was it a new Thing either in the British General, or the Dutch Deputies, to refuse fighting, when they did not approve When the Duke of Marlborough was going to invest Bouchain, the Deputies of the States pressed him in vain to engage the Enemy; and one of them was fo far discontented upon his Grace's Refusal, that he presently became a Partizan of the Peace; yet, I do not remember any Clamour then raised here against the Duke upon that Account. Again, when the French invaded Doway, after the Confederates had deferted the Duke of Ormonde, Prince Eugene was violently bent upon a Battle, and faid

opportunity: But Monsieur—, a private Deputy, rose up, and opposed it so far, that the Prince was forced to desist. Was it then more Criminal in the Duke of Ormonde to resuse fighting, by express Commands of the Queen, and in order to get Possession of Dunkirk, than for the Duke of Marlborough to give the same Resusal, without any such Orders, or any such Advantage? Or, shall a Dutch Deputy assume more Power than the Queen of Great Britain's General, acting by the immedi-

ate Commands of his Sovereign?

THE Emperor and the Empire (fays Mr. Steele, by Way of Admiration) continue the War! Is his Imperial Majesty able to continue it or no? If he be, then Great Britain hath been strangely used for ten Years past: Then how came it to pass, That of above thirty thousand Men in his Service in Italy, at the Time of the Battle of Turin, there were not above four thousand paid by himself? If he be not able to continue it, Why does he go on? The Reasons are clear; because the War only affects the Princes of the Empire, (whom he is willing enough to expose) but not his own Dominions. Befides, the Imperial Ministers are in daily Expectation of the QUEEN's Death, which they hope will give a new Turn to Affairs, and rekindle the War in Europe upon the old Foot; and we know how the Ministers of that Court publickly Assign it for a Reason of their Obstinacy against Peace, that they hope for a fudden Revolution in England. In the mean Time, this Appearance of the Emperor being forfaken by his Ally, will ferve to encrease the Clamour both here and in Holland, against her Majesty, and those she employs. MR.

MR. Steele says, There can be no Crime in affirming, (if it be Truth) that the House of Bourbon is at this Juncture become more formidable, and bids fairer for an Universal Monarchy, and to engross the whole

Trade of Europe, than it did before the War.

No Crime in affirming it, if it be Truth. for once allow his Proposition. But if it be false, then I affirm, that whoever advanceth fo feditious a Falshood, deferveth to be hanged. Doth he mean by the House of Bourbon, the two Kings of France and Spain? If fo, I reject his Meaning, which would infinuate that the Interests and Defigns of both those Princes will be the same; whereas they are more opposite than those of any two other Monarchs in Christendom. This is the old foolish Slander fo frequently flung upon the Peace, and as These factious Undertakers of frequently refuted. the Press write with great Advantage; they strenuoully affirm a thousand Falshoods, without Fear, Wit, Conscience, or Knowledge; and we, who anfwer them, must be at the Expence of an Argument for each: After which, in the very next Pamphlet, we see the same Affertions produced again, without the least Notice of what hath been faid to disprove them. By the House of Bourbon, doth he mean only the French King for the Time being? If so, and his Affertion be true, then that Prince must either deal with the Devil; or else the Money and Blood spent in our ten Years Victories against him, might as well have continued in the Purses and Veins of her Majesty's Subjects.

But the particular Affertions of this Author are easier detected than his general ones; I shall therefore proceed upon examining the Former. For Instance: I desire him to ask the Dutch, who can best inform him, Why they delivered up Traerback,

to the Imperialists? For, as to the QUEEN, her Majesty was never once consulted in it; whatever his Preceptors, the Politicians of Button's Cosse-House may have informed him to the contrary.

MR. Steele affirms, that the French bave begun the Demolition of Dunkirk Contemptuously and Arbitrarily their own Way. The Governor of the Town, and those Gentlemen entrusted with the Inspection of this Work, do affure me, that the Fact is altogether otherwise: That, the Method prescribed by those whom her Majesty employs, hath been exactly followed, and that the Works are already demolished. I will venture to tell him further, That the Domolition was fo long deferred, in order to remove those Difficulties which the Barrier-Treaty hath put us under; and the Event hath shewn, that it was prudent to proceed no faster until those Difficulties were got over. The Mole and Harbour could not be destroyed until the Ships were got out, which by Reason of some profound Secrets of State, did not happen until the other Day. Who gave bim those just Suspicions that the Mole and Harbour will never be destroyed? What is it he would now infinuate? That the Ministry is bribed to leave the most important Part of the Work undone; or, that the Pretender is to invade us from thence; or, that the QUEEN hath entered into a Conspiracy with her Servants to prevent the good Effects of the Peace, for no other End but to lose the Affections of her People, and endanger her felf.

INSTEAD of any further Information, which I could easily give, but which no honest Man can want; I venture to affirm, that the Mole and Harbour of Dunkirk will in a short Time be most effectually destroyed; and at the same Time, I ven-

ture to Prophecy, that neither Mr. Steele, nor his

Faction, will ever confess they believe it.

After all, it is a little hard, that the QUEEN cannot be allowed to demolish this Town in whatever Manner she pleaseth to fancy: Mr. Steele, must have it done his own Way, and is angry the French have pretended to do it theirs; and yet he wrongs them into the Bargain. For my own Part, I do feriously think, the most Christian King to be a much better Friend of her Majesty's than Mr. Steele, or any of his Faction. Besides, it is to be considered, that he is a Monarch and a Relation; and therefore, if I were a Privy-Counsellor, and my Advice to be asked, which of those two * GENTLEMEN BORN should have the Direction in the Demolition of Dunkirk, I would give it for the former; because I look upon Mr. Steele, in Quality of a Member of his Party, to be much more skilful in demolishing at Home than Abroad.

THERE is a Prospect of more Danger to the Balance of Europe, and to the Trade of Britain, from the Emperor over-running Italy, than from France over-running the Empire; that his Imperial Majesty entertains such Thoughts, is visible to the World: And, although little can be said to justify many Actions of the French King, yet the worst of them have never equalled the Emperor's Arbitrary keeping the Possession of Milan, directly contrary to his Oath, and to the express Words of the Golden Bull; which oblige him to deliver up every Fief that falls; or else they must all in the Course

of Time lapse into his own Hands.

I was at a Loss who it was that Mr. Steele hinted at some Time ago by the powerful Hands, that deals out Crowns and Kingdoms all around us: I now plainly find, he meant no other Hand but his own,

[.] Mr. STEELE often files bimfelf fo.

He hath dealt out the Crown of Spain to France; to France he hath given Leave to invade the Empire next Spring with two hundred thousand Men; and, now at last he deals to France the Imperial Dignity; and so farewel Liberty; Europe will be French. But in order to bring all this about, the Capital of Austria, the Residence of his Imperial Majesty must continue to be visited by the Plague, of which the Emperor must die, and so the Thing is done.

Why should not I venture to deal out one Sceptre in my Turn as well as Mr. Steele? I therefore deal out the Empire to the Elector of Saxony, upon Failure of Issue to this Emperor at his Death; provided the Whigs will prevail on the Son to turn Papist to get an Empire, as they did upon the Father to get a Kingdom. Or, if this Prince be not approved of, I deal out in his stead, the Elector of Bavaria: And, in one or the other of these, I dare engage to have all Christendom to second me, whatever the Spleen, in the Shape of Politicks, may

dictate to the Author of the Crisis.

Circumstances of the Affairs of Europe, is to signify to the World, that all Europe is put in the high Road to Slavery by the Corruption of her Majesty's present Ministers; and so he goes on to Portugal; which baving, during the War supplied us with Gold in exchange for our Woollen-Manusacture, bath only at present a Suspension of Arms for its Protection, to last no longer than until the Catalonians are reduced; and then the old Pretensions of Spain to Portugal will be revived: And Portugal, when once enslaved by Spain, falls naturally with the rest of Europe into the Gulph of France. In the mean Time, let us see what Relief a little Truth can give this unhappy Kingdom.

Kingdom. That, Portugal hath yet no more than a Suspension of Arms, they may thank themselves, because they came so late into the Treaty; and, that they came so late, they may thank the Whigs, whose salse Representations they were so weak to believe. However, the Queen hath voluntarily given them a Guarantee to defend them against Spain until the Peace shall be made; and such Terms after the Peace, are stipulated for them, as the Portuguese themselves are contented with.

HAVING mentioned the Catalonians, he puts the Question, Who can name the Catalonians without a Tear? That can I; for he hath told so many melancholy Stories without one Syllable of Truth, that he hath blunted the Edge of my Fears, and I shall not be startled at the worst he can say. What he affirms concerning the Catalonians is included in the following Particulars: First, That they were drawn into the War by the Encouragement of the Maritime Powers; by which are understood England and Holland: But, he is too good a Friend of the Dutch, to give them any Part of the Blame. Secondly, That, they are now abandoned and exposed to the Resentment of an enraged Prince. Thirdly, That, they always opposed the Person and Interest of that Prince, who is their present King. Lastly, That, the Doom is dreadful of those who shall in the Sight of God be esteemed their Destroyers. And, if we interpret the Infinuation he makes, according to his own Mind, the Destruction of those People, must be imputed to the present Ministry.

I AM fometimes in Charity disposed to hope, that this Writer is not always sensible of the flagrant Falshoods he utters, but is either biassed by an Inclination to believe the worst, or a Want of Judgment to chuse his Informers. That the Catalonians

were drawn into the War by the Encouragement of ber Majesty, should not in Decency have been affirmed until about fifty Years hence; when it might be supposed there would be no living Witness left to disprove it. It was only upon the Asfurances of a Revolt, given by the Prince of Heffe and others, and their Invitation, that the QUEEN was prevailed with to fend her Forces upon that Expedition. When Barcelona was taken by a most unexpected Accident, of a Bomb lighting on the Magazine, then indeed the Catalonians revolted, having before submitted and sworn Allegiance to Philip, as much as any other Province of Spain. Upon the Peace between that Crown and Britain, the QUEEN, in order to ease the Emperor, and fave his Troops, stipulated with King Philip for a Neutrality in Italy, and that his Imperial Majesty should have Liberty to evacuate Catalonia; upon Conditions of absolute Indemnity to the Catalans, with an entire Restitution to their Honours, Dignities, and Estates. As this Neutrality was never observed by the Emperor, so he never effectually evacuated Catalonia; for, although he fent away the main Body, he left behind many Officers and private Men, who now spirit up and affift those obstinate People to continue in their Rebellion. It is true indeed, that King Philip did not absolutely restore the Catalons to all their old Priviledges, of which they never made other Use than as an Encouragement to rebel; but, to the same Priviledges with his Subjects of Castille, particularly to the Liberty of Trading, and having Employments in the West-Indies, which they never enjoyed before. fides, the QUEEN referved to her felf the Power of procuring farther Immunities for them, wherein the most Christian King was obliged to second her:

For, his Catholick Majesty intended no more, than to retrench those Priviledges under the Pretext of which they now rebel, as they had formerly done in favour of France. How dreadful then must the Doom be of those who hindered these People from submitting to the gentle Terms offered them by their Prince! And who, although they be conscious of their own Inability to surnish one single Ship for the Support of the Catalans, are at this Instant spurring them on to their Ruin, by Promises of Aid and Protection.

Thus much in Answer to Mr. Steele's Account of the Affairs of Europe; from which he deduceth the Universal Monarchy of France, and the Danger of I know not how many Popish Successors to Britain. His political Reflections are as good as his Facts. We must observe, says he, that the Person who seems to be the most favoured by the French King in the late Treaties, is the Duke of Savoy. Extreamly right: For, what ever that Prince got by the Peace, he owes entirely to her Majesty, as a just Reward for his having been so firm and useful an Ally; neither was France brought with more Difficulty to yield any one Point, than that of allowing the Duke such a Barrier as the Queen insisted on.

He is become the most powerful Prince in Italy. I had rather see him so, than the Emperor. He is supposed to have entered into a secret and strict Alliance with the House of Bourbon. This is one of those Facts wherein I am most inclined to believe the Author, because it is what he must needs be utterly ignorant of, and therefore might possibly be

true.

I THOUGHT indeed we should be safe from all Popish Successors as far as Italy, because of the prodigious Clutter about sending the Pretender thither.

But they will never agree where to fix their Longitude. The Duke of Savoy is the more dangerous for removing to Sicily: He adds to our Fears for being too near. So, whether France conquer Germany, or be in Peace and good Understanding with it; either Event will put us and Holland at Mercy of France, which hath a Quiver full of Pretenders, at its back, when ever the Chevalier shall die.

This was just the Logick of poor Prince Butler, a spleenatick mad Man, whom every Body may remember about the Town. Prince Pamphilio in Italy employed Emissaries to torment Prince Butler here. But what if Prince Pamphilio die? Why then, he hath left in his Will, that his Heirs and

Executors torment Prince Butler for ever.

I CANNOT think it a Misfortune, what Mr. Steele affirms, That treasonable Books lately dispersed among us, striking apparently at the Hanover Succession, have passed almost without Observation from the Generality of the People; because it seems a certain Sign that the Generality of the People are well disposed to that illustrious Family: But, I look upon it as a great Evil, to fee feditious Books dispersed among us, apparently striking at the QUEEN and her Administration, at the Constitution in Church and State, and at all Religion; yet passing without Objervation from the Generality of those in Power: But whether this Remissiness may be imputed to White-Hall, or Westminster-Hall, is other Mens Bufiness to enquire. Mr. Steele knows in his Conscience, that the Queries concerning the Pretender, iffued from one of his own Party. And as for the poor Nonjuring Clergyman, who was trufted with committing to the Press a late Book on the Subject of Hereditary Right, by a Strain of the Summum Jus, he is now, as I am told, with half a score Children,

Children, starving and rotting among Thieves and Pick-pockets, in the common Room of a stinking Jail. I have never seen either the Book or the Publisher; however, I would fain ask one single * Person in the World a Question; Why he who hath so often drank the abdicated King's Health upon his Knees?----But the Transition is natural and frequent, and I shall not trouble him for an Answer.

IT is the hardest Case in the World, that Mr. Steele should take up the artificial Reports of his own Faction, and then put them off upon the World, as additional Fears of a Popish Successor. can affure him, that no good Subject of the QUEEN is under the least Concern whether the Pretender be converted or no, farther than their Wishes that all Men would embrace the true Religion. But, reporting backwards and forwards upon this Point, helps to keep up the Noise, and is a Topick for Mr. Steele to enlarge himself upon, by shewing how little we can depend on fuch Conversions; by collecting a Lift of Popish Cruelties, and repeating, after himself and the Bishop of Sarum, the dismal Effects likely to follow upon the Return of that Superstition among us.

But, as this Writer is reported by those who know him, to be what the French call Journalier, his Fear and Courage operating according to the Weather in our uncertain Climate; I am apt to believe, the two last Pages of his Crisis were written on a Sunshine Day. This I guess from the general Tenor of them, and particularly from an unwary Assertion, which, if he believe as firmly as I do, will at once overthrow all his Foreign and Dome-

flick

^{*} PARKER, afterwards Lord Chanceller.

flick Fears of a Popish Successor. As divided a People as we are, those who stand for the House of Hanover, are INFINITELY Superior in Number, Wealth, Courage, and all Arts Military and Civil, to those in the contrary Interest; besides which, we have the Laws, I fay, the Laws on our Side. The Laws, I fay, the Laws. This elegant Repetition is, I think, a little out of Place: For, the Stress might better have been laid upon fo great a Majority of the Nation; without which, I doubt the Laws would be of little Weight; although they be very good additional Securities. And, if what he here afferts be true, as it certainly is, although he affert it; (for I allow even the Majority of his own Party to be against the Pretender) there can be no Danger of a Popish Successor, except from the unreasonable Jealousies of the best among that Party; and from the Malice, the Avarice, or Ambition of the worst; without which, Britain would be able to defend her Succession against all her Enemies both at Home and Abroad. Most of the Dangers from Abroad which he enumerates as the Confequences of this very bad Peace, made by the QUEEN. and approved by Parliament, must have subsisted under any Peace at all; unless, among other Projects equally feafible, we could have stipulated to cut the Throats of every Popish Relation to the Royal Family.

Well; by this Author's own Confession, a Number infinitely superior, and the best circumstantiated imaginable, are for the Succession in the House of Hanover. This Succession is established, confirmed, and secured by several Laws; her Majesty's repeated Declarations, and the Oaths of all her Subjects, engage both her and them to preserve what those Laws have settled. This is a Security indeed,

a Security adequate at least to the Importance of the Thing; and yet, according to the Whig-Scheme, as delivered to us by Mr. Steele, and his Coadjutors, is altogether insufficient; and the Succession will be defeated, the Pretender brought in, and Popery established among us, without the farther Assistance of this Writer and his Faction.

AND what Securities have our Adversaries sub-stituted in the Place of these? A Club of Politicians, where Jenny Man presides; A Crisis written by Mr. Steele; a Confederacy of knavish Stock-Jobbers to ruin Credit; a Report of the Queen's Death; an Essignes of the Pretender run twice through the Body by a valiant Peer: A Speech by the Author of the Crisis: And to sum up all, an unlimited Freedom of reviling her Majesty, and those

the employs.

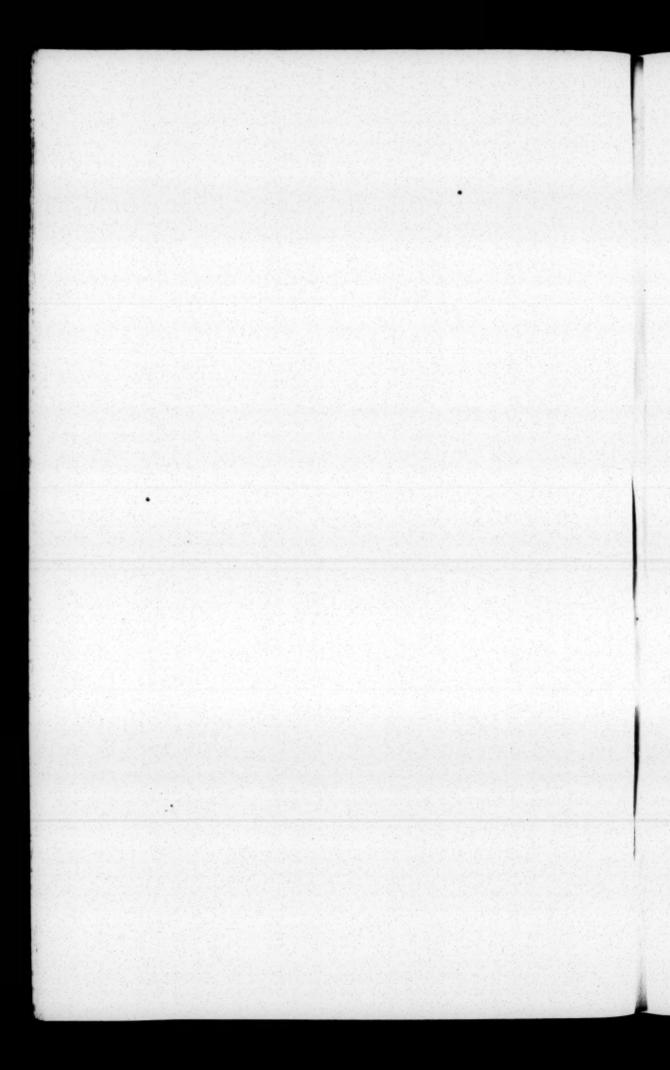
I HAVE now finished the most disgustful Task that ever I undertook: I could with more Ease have written three dull Pamphlets, than remarked upon the Falshoods and Absurdities of One. was quite confounded last Wednesday when the Printer came with another Pamphlet in his Hand, written by the fame Author, and entituled, The Englishman, being the Close of the Paper so called, &c. He defired I would read it over, and confider it in a Paper by it felf; which last I absolutely refused. Upon Perusal, I sound it chiefly an Invective against Toby, the Ministry, the Examiner, the Clergy, the QUEEN, and the Post-Boy: Yet, at the fame Time with great Justice exclaiming against those who prefumed to offer the least Word against the Heads of that Faction whom her Majesty discarded. The Author likewise proposeth an equal Division of Favour and Employments between the Whigs and Tories: For, if the former can have no VOL. VI.

Part or Portion in David, they defire no longer to be bis Subjects. He infifts, that her Majesty bath exactly followed Monficur Tugbe's Memorial against demolishing of Dunkirk. He reflects with great Satisfaction on the Good already done to his Country by the Non nobis Domine, non nobis, &c .--- He gives us Hopes that he will leave off Writing, and confult his own Quiet and Happines; and concludes with a Letter to a Friend at Court. I suppose by the Style of old Friend, and the like, it must be some Body there of his own Level; among whom, his Party have indeed more Friends than I could wish. In this Letter he afferts, that the present Ministers were not educated in the Church of England, but are new Converts from Presbytery. Upon which I can only reflect, how blind the Malice of that Man must be, who invents a groundless Lye in order to defame his Superiors, which would be no Difgrace, if it had been a Truth. And he concludes, with making three Demands for the Satisfaction of himfelf and other Malecontents. First, The Demolition of the Harbour of Dunkirk: Secondly, That Great-Britain and France would beartily join against the exorlitant Power of the Duke of Lorrain, and force the Pretender from bis Afylum at Bar le Duc: Laftly. That bis Electoral Highness of Hanover would be so grateful to fignify to all the World, the perfett good Understanding be bath with the Court of England, in as plain Terms as her Majesty was pleased to declare the had with that House on ber Part.

As to the first of these Demands, I will venture to undertake it shall be granted; but then Mr. Steele, and his Brother Malecontents, must promise to believe the Thing is done, after those employed have made their Report; or else bring Vouchers to disprove it. Upon the second; I cannot tell whe-

ther her Majesty will engage in a War against the Duke of Lorrain, to force him to remove the Pretender; but I believe, if the Parliament should think it necessary to Address upon such an Occasion, the Queen will move that Prince to send him away. His last Demand, offered under the Title of a Wish, is of so insolent and seditious a Strain, that I care not to touch it. Here he directly chargeth her Majesty with delivering a Falshood to her Parliament from the Throne; and declares he will not believe her, until the Elector of Hanover himself shall vouch for the Truth of what she hath so solemnly affirmed.

I AGREE with this Writer, that it is an idle Thing in his Antagonists to trouble themselves upon the Articles of bis Birib, Education, or Fortune; for whoever writes at this Rate of his Sovereign, to whom he owes so many personal Obligations, I should never enquire whether he be a GENTLE-MAN BORN, but whether he be a HUMAN GREATURE.



PREFACE

To the RIGHT REVEREND

Dr. B—7, B—p of S—; INTRODUCTION

To the THIRD VOLUME of the

HISTORY of the REFORMATION

OFTHE

CHURCH of England.

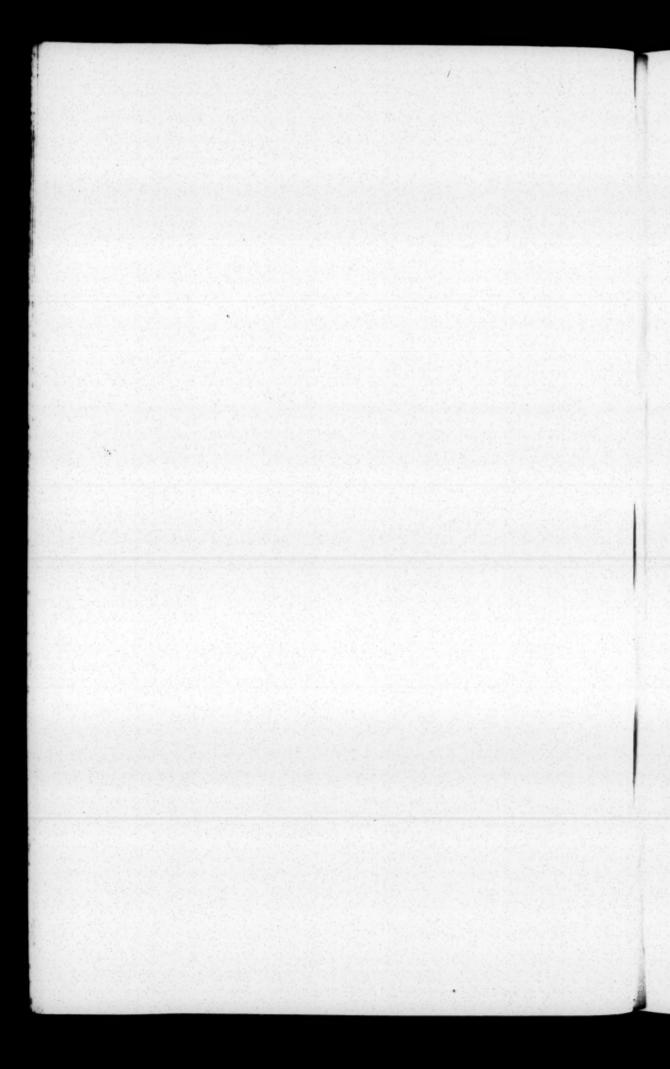
In vulgum ambiguas; & quærere conscius arma.

WRITTEN in the YEAR, 1712.

DUBLIN:

Printed by and for GEORGE FAULKNER.

MDCCXXXVII.



THE

PREFACE.

Mr. Morphew,

Vertisement in the Examiner hath been of very great Use to me. I do now send you my Preface to the B—p of S—'s Introduction to his third Volume, which I desire you to print in such a Form, as in the Bookfeller's Phrase, will make a sixpenny Touch; hoping, it will give such a publick Notice of my Design, that it may come into the Hands of those who perhaps look not into the B—p's Introduction.

The PREFACE.

troduction. I desire you will presix to this a Passage out of Virgil, which doth so perfectly agree with my present Thoughts of his Lordship, that I cannot express them better, nor more truly than those Words do.

I am, Sir,

Your humble Servant.

A

PREFACE

To the RIGHT REVEREND

Dr. $B \longrightarrow T$, $B \longrightarrow p$ of $S \longrightarrow m$'s

INTRODUCTION.

Books that are, God knows when, to come out, is either wholly new, or so long unpracticed, that my small Reading cannot trace it: However, we are to suppose, that a Person of his Lordship's great Age and Experience, would hardly act such a Piece of Singularity, without some extraordinary Motives. I cannot but observe, that his Fellow-Labourer, the Author of the Paper, called, * The English Man, seems, in some

of his late Performances, to have almost transcribed the Notions of the B - p: These Notions, I take to have been dictated by the same Masters, leaving to each Writer that peculiar Manner of expressing himself, which the Poverty of our Language forceth me to call their Stile. When the Guardian changed his Title, and professed to engage in Faction, I was fure the Word was given, that grand Preparations were making against next Sessions: That, all Advantages would be taken of the little Diffentions reported to be among those in Power; and, that the Guardian would foon be feconded by some other Piquerers from the same Camp. will confess, my Suspicions did not carry me so far, as to conjecture, that this venerable Champion would be in such mighty Haste to come into the Field, and ferve in the Quality of an Enfant perdu, armed only with a Pocket Pistol, before his great Blanderbuss could be got ready, his old rusty Breast Plate scoured, and his cracked Head-piece mended.

I was debating with my felf, whether this Hint of producing a fmall Pamphlet to give Notice of a large Folio, were not borrowed from the Ceremonial in Spanish Romances, where a Dwarf is fent out upon the Battlements, to fignify to all Passengers, what a mighty Giant there is in the Castle: Or, whether the B-p copied this Proceeding from the Fanfaronnade of Monsieur Bouffleurs, when the Earl of Portland and that General, had an Interview. Several Men were appointed at certain Periods, to ride in great Haste towards the English Camp, and cry out, Monseigneur vient, Monseigneur Then, small Parties advanced with the vient : fame Speed, and the fame Cry; and this Foppery held for many Hours, until the Marejebal himself arrived. So here, the B-p (as we find by his Dedication

Dedication to Mr. Churchill the Bookfeller) hath for a long Time, fent Warning of his Arrival, by Advertisements in Gazettes; and now his Introduction advanceth to tell us again, Monseigneur vient: In the mean Time, we must gape, and wait, and gaze, the Lord knows how long, and keep our Spirits in some reasonable Agitation, until his Lordship's real self, shall think nt to appear in the Habit of a Folio.

I H VE feen the fame Sort of Management at a Puppet Show. Some Puppets of little or no Consequence, appeared several Times at the Window, to allure the Boys and the Rabble: The Trumpeter founded often, and the Door-keeper cried an hundred Times, until he was Hoarfe, that they were just going to begin; yet after all, we were forced fome Times to wait an Hour before Punch himself in Person made his Entry.

But why this Ceremony among old Acquaintance? The World and he have long known one another: Let him appoint his Hour and make his Visit, without troubling us all Day with a Succession

of Meffages from his Lacqueys and Pages.

WITH Submission, these little Arts of getting off an Edition, do ill become any Author above the Size of Marten the Surgeon. My L--d tells us, That many thousands of the two former Parts of bis History are in the Kingdom; and now he perpetually advertiseth in the Gazette, that he intends to publish the Third: This is exactly in the Method and Stile of Marten: The seventh Edition (many thoufands of the former Editions having been fold off in a small Time) of Mr. Marten's Book concerning secret Diseases, &c.

DOTH his L p intend to publish his great Volume by Subscription, and is this Introduction only only by Way of Specimen? I was inclined to think fo, because in the prefixed Letter to Mr. Churchill, which introduces this Introduction, there are some dubious Expressions: He says, The Advertisements be published, were in order to move People to surnish bim with Materials which might belp him to finish his Work with great Advantage. If he means half a Guinea upon the Subscription, and the other Half at the Delivery, why doth he not tell us so in plain Terms?

I AM wondering how it came to pass, that this diminutive Letter to Mr. Churchill, should understand the Business of introducing better than the Introduction it self; or why the B—p did not take it into his Head to send the former into the World some Months before the latter; which would have been yet a greater Improvement upon the Solemnity of the Procession.

SINCE I writ these last Lines, I have perused the whole Pamphlet (which I had only dipt in before) and found I have been hunting upon a wrong Scent; for the Author hath in several Parts of his Piece, discovered the true Motives, which put him upon sending it abroad at this Juncture; I shall therefore consider them as they come in my Way.

My Lord begins his Introduction with an Account of the Reasons, why he was guilty of so many Mistakes in the first Volume of his History of the Reformation: His Excuses are just, rational, and extremely consistent. He says, He wrote in Haste, which he confirms by adding, That it lay a Year aster be wrote it, before it was put into the Press: At the same Time he mentions a Passage extremely to the Honour of that pious and excellent Prelate, Archbishop Sancrost, which demonstrates his Grace to have been a Person of great Sagacity, and almost

a Prophet. Doctor B-t then a private Divine, defired admittance to the Cotton Library, but was prevented by the Archbishop, who told Sir John Cotton, that the said Doctor was no Friend to the Prerogative of the Crown, or to the Constitution of the Kingdom. This Judgment was the more extraordinary, because the Doctor had not long before published a Book in Scotland, with his Name prefixed, which carries the Regal Prerogative higher than any Writer of the Age: However, the good Archbishop lived to see his Opinion become universal in the

Kingdom.

THE B---p goes on for many Pages, with an Account of certain Facts relating to the publishing his two former Volumes of the Reformation; the great Success of that Work, and the Adversaries who appeared against it. These are Matters out of the Way of my Reading; only I observe that poor Mr. Henry Wharton, who hath deferved so well of the Commonwealth of Learning, and who gave himself the Trouble of detecting some Hundreds of the B----p's Mistakes, meets very ill Quarter from his L-p. Upon which I cannot avoid mentioning a peculiar Method which this P---e takes to revenge himself upon those who presume to differ from him in Print. The prefent Bishop of Rochester happened some Years ago to be of this Number. My L---d of S---m in his Reply ventured to tell the World, that the Gentleman who had writ against him, meaning Dr. Atterbury, was one upon whom he had conferred great Obligati ons; which was a very generous Christian Contriwance of charging his Adversary with Ingratitude. But it feems, the Truth happened to be on the other Side.

Side, which the Doctor made appear in fuch a Manner as would have filenced his Lordship for ever, if he had not been Writing-proof. Poor Mr. Wharton in his Grave, is charged with the fame Accufation, but with Circumstances the most aggravating that Malice and fomething elfe could invent; and which I will no more believe, than five hundred Paffages in a certain Book of Travels. See the Character he gives of a Divine, and a Scholar, who shortened his Life in the Service of Gop and the Church. Mr. Wharton defired me to intercede with Tillotson for a Prebend of Canterbury. I did fo, but Wharton would not believe it; faid be would be revenged, and so writ against me. Soon after he was convinced I had spoke for him, said be was fet on to do what be did, and if I would procure any Thing for him, he would discover every Thing to me, What a Spirit of Candor, Charity, and good Nature, Generofity, and Truth, fhines through this Story, told of a most excellent and pious Divine, twenty Years after his Death, without one fingle Voucher!

Come we now to the Reasons which moved his Lordship to set about this Work at this Time. He could delay it no longer, because the Reasons of his engaging in it at first, seemed to return upon him. He was then frightened with the Danger of a Popish Successor in View, and the dreadyul Apprehensions of the Power of France. England hath forgot these Dangers, and yet is nearer to them than ever, and therefore he is resolved to awaken them with his third Volume; but in the mean Time, sends this Introduction to let them know they are assept. He then goes on in describing the Condition of the Kingdom

Kingdom after such a Manner as if Destruction hung over us by a single Hair; as if the Pope, the Devil, the Pretender, and France, were just at our Doors.

WHEN the B-p published his History, there was a Popish Plot on Foot: The Duke of York, a known Papift, was prefumptive Heir to the Crown; the House of Commons would not hear of any Expedients for fecuring their Religion under a Popish Prince, nor would the King or Lords confent to a Bill of Exclusion: The Irench King was in the Height of his Grandeur, and the Vigour of his Age. At this Day the Prefumptive Heir, with that whole illustrious Family, are Protestants; the Popish Pretender excluded for ever by several Acts of Parliament; and every Person in the smallest Employment, as well as Member in both Houses. obliged to abjure him. The French King is at the lowest Ebb of Life; his Armies have been conquered, and his Towns won from him for ten Years together; and his Kingdom is in Danger of being torn by Divisions during a long Minority. Are these Cases Parallel? Or are we now in more Danger of France and Popery than we were thirty Years ago? What can be the Motive for advancing tuch falle, fuch deteftable Affertions? What Conclusions would his Lordship draw from such Premises as these? If injurious Appellations were of any Advantage to a Cause, (as the Stile of our Adversaries would make us believe) what Appellations would those deserve, who thus endeavour to sow the Seeds of Sedition, and are impatient to fee the Fruits? But, faith he, the deaf Adder stops her Ear, let the Charmer charm never fo wifely. True, my L-d, there are indeed too many Auders in this Nation's Botom; Adders in all Shapes, and in all Habits, whom

whom neither the Queen nor Parliament, can charm

to Loyalty, Truth, Religion, or Honour.

Among other Instances produced by him of the dismal Condition we are in, he offers one which could not easily be guessed. It is this, That the little factious Pamphlets written about the End of King Charles II. Reign, lie dead in Shops, are looked on as waste Paper, and turned to Pasteboard. How many are there of his Lordship's Writing, which could otherwise never have been of any real Service to the Publick? Hath he indeed so mean an Opinion of our Taste, to send us at this Time of Day into all the Corners of Holborn, Duck-Lane, and Moorfields, in quest after the sactious Trash, published in those Days by Julian Johnson, Hickeringil,

Dr. Oates, and himfelf.

His Lordship taking it for a Postulatum, that the QUEEN and Ministry, both Houses of Parliament, and a vast Majority of the Landed Gentlemen throughout England, are running headlong into Pofery, layeth hold on the Occasion to describe the Cruelties in Queen MARY's Reign: An Inquisition fetting up, Faggots in Smithfield, and Executions all over the Kingdom. Here is that, fays he, which those that look towards a Popish Successor must look for. And he infinuates through his whole Pamphlet, that all who are not of his Party, look towards a Pepish Successor. These he divides into two Parts, the Tory Lait, and the Tory Clergy. He tells the former, Although they have no Religion at all, but refolve to change with every Wind and Tide; yet they ought to have Compassion on their Countrymen and Kindred. Then he applies himself to the Tory Clergy, affaces them, that the Fires revived in Smithfield. and all over the Nation, will have no amiable View; but least of all to them, who if they have any Principles

at all, must be turned out of their Livings, leave their Families, be bunted from Place to Place, into Parts beyond the Seas, and meet with that Contempt, with which they treated Foreigners who took Sanctuary

among us.

THIS requires a Recapitulation, with fome Remarks. First, I do affirm, that in every hundred of professed Atheists, Deists and Socinians in the Kingdom, ninety-nine at leaft, are flanch thorowpaced Whigs, entirely agreeing with his L -- p in Politicks and Discipline; and therefore will venture all the Fires of Hell rather than finge one Hair of their Beards in Smithfield. Secondly, I do likewise affirm; That those whom we usually understand by the Appellation of Tory or High-church Clergy, were the greatest Sticklers against the exorbitant Proceedings of King James the Second, the best Writers against Popery, and the most exemplary Sufferers for the Established Religion. Thirdly, I do pronounce it to be a most false and infamous Scandal upon the Nation in General, and on the Clergy in particular, to reproach them for treating Foreigners with Haughtiness and Contempt: The French Hugonots are many thousand Witnesses to the contrary; and, I wish, they deserved the thousandth Part of the good Treatment they have received.

LASTLY, I observe that the Author of a Paper, called, The Englishman, hath run into the same Cant, gravely advising the whole Body of the Clergy, not to bring in Popery, because that will put them under a Necessity of parting with their Wives, or losing their Livings.

THE Bulk of the Kingdom, both Clergy and Layety, happen to differ extremely from this P-e-l-e in many Principles, both of Politicks and Re-Vol. VI.

ligion: Now I ask, Whether if any Man of them had signed their Name to a System of Atheism or Popery, he could have argued with them otherways than he doth? Or, if I should write a grave Letter to his L——p with the same Advice, taking it for granted, that he was half an Atheist and half a Papist, and conjuring him, by all he held dear, to have Compassion upon all those who believed a God, not to revive the Fires in Smithsield, that he must either forseit his Bishoprick, or not marry a fourth Wise; I ask, Whether he would not think I intended him the highest Injury and Affront?

But as to the Tory Layety, he gives them up in a Lump for abandoned Atheists: They are a Set of Men so impiously corrupted in the Point of Religion that no Scene of Cruelty can fright them from leaping into it (Popery) and perhaps asting such a Part in it, as may be assigned them. He therefore despairs of influencing them by any Topicks drawn from Religion or Compassion, and advances the Consideration of Interest, as the only powerful Argu-

ment to perfuade them against Popery.

What he offers upon this Head is so very amazing from a Christian, a Clergyman, and a Prelate of the Church of England, that I must in my own Imagination, strip him of those three Capacities, and put him among the Number of that Set of Men he mentions in the Paragraph before; or else it will be impossible to shape out an Answer.

His L----p, in order to diffuade the Tories from their Defign of bringing in Popery, tells them, How valuable a Part of the whole Soil of England, the Abbey Lands, the Estates of the Bishops, of the Cathedrals, and the Tythes are: How difficult such a Resumption would be to many Fami-

lies 1

hies; yet all these must be thrown up; for, Sacrilege in the Church of Rome, is a mortal Sin. I desire it may be observed, What a Jumble here is made of Ecclefiaftical Revenues, as if they were all upon the fame Foot, were alienated with equal Justice; and the Clergy had no more Reason to complain of one than the other. Whereas, the four Branches mentioned by him, are of very different Confideration. If I might venture to guess the Opinion of the Clergy upon this Matter, I believe they could wish, that fome small Part of the Abbey Lands had been applied to the Augmentation of poor Bishopricks; and a very few Acres to serve for Glebes in those Parishes where there are none; after which, I think they would not repine that the Laity should posfefs the rest. If the Estates of some Bishops and Cathedrals were exorbitant before the Reformation, I believe the present Clergy's Wishes reach no further, than that some reasonable Temper had been used, instead of paring them to the Quick: But, as to the Tythes, without examining whether they be of divine Institution, I conceive there is hardly one of that facred Order in England, and very few even among the Layety who love the Church, who will not allow the misapplying those Revenues to secular Persons, to have been at first a most flagrant Act of Injustice and Oppression: Although at the fame Time, God forbid they should be restored any other Way, than by gradual Purchase, by the Confent of those who are now the lawful Possessors, or by the Piety and Generosity of such worthy Spirits, as this Nation fometimes produceth. The B----p knows very well, that the Application of Tythes to the Maintenance of Monasteries, was a scandalous Usurpation, even in Popish Times; That the Monks usually fent out some of their Fraternity F 2

Fraternity to supply the Cures; and that, when the Monasteries were granted away by Henry VIII. the Parishes were left destitute, or very meanly provided of any Maintenance for a Pastor. So, that in many Places the whole Ecclefiaftical Dues, even to Mortuaries, Easter-Offerings, and the like, are in Lay-Hands, and the Incumbent lieth wholly at the Mercy of his Patron for his daily Bread. By these Means there are several hundred Parishes in England under 201. a Year, and many under Ten. I take his L----p's Bishoprick to be worth near 2500 l. annual Income; and I will engage, at half a Year's Warning, to find him above 100 beneficed Clergy-men who have not fo much among them all to support themfelves and their Families; most of them Orthodox, of good Life and Conversation; as loath to fee the Fires kindled in Smithfield, as his L--dsh-p; and, at least, as ready to face them under a Popish Persecution. But nothing is so hard for those, who abound in Riches, as to conceive how others can be in Want. How can the neighbouring Vicar feel Cold or Hunger, while my L---d is feated by a good Fire in the warmest Room of his Palace, with a dozen Dishes before him? I remember one other P--1--e much of the fame Stamp, who, when his Clergy would mention their Wifhes, that fome Act of Parliament might be thought of for the Good of the Church; would fay, Gentlemen, WE are very well as WE are; if they would let Us alone, WE should ask no more.

SACRILEGE (says my L---d) in the Church of Rome, is a mortal Sin: And is it only so in the Church of Rome? Or, is it but a venial Sin in the Church of England? Our Litany calls Fornication a deadly Sin; and, I would appeal to his Lordship

for fifty Years past, whether he thought that or Sacrilege the deadliest. To make light of such a Sin, at the same Moment that he is frighting us from an idolatrous Religion, should seem not very consistent. Thou that sayest, a Man should not commit Adultery, dost thou commit Adultery? Thou that ab-

borrest Idols, dost thou commit Sacrilege?

To fmooth the Way for the Return of Popery in Queen Mary's Time, the Grantees were confirmed by the Pope in the Possession of the Abby-Lands. But the Bishop tells us, that this Confirmation was fraudulent and invalid. I shall believe it to be so, although I happen to read it in his L----sh-p's Hiflory: But he adds, that although the Confirmation bad been good, the Priests would have got their Lands again, by those two Methods: First, The Statute of Mortmain was repealed for twenty Years, in which time, no doubt they reckoned they would recover the best Part of what they had lost: Beside; that engaging the Clergy to renew no Leases, was a thing entirely in their own Power; and this in forty Years time, would raise their Revenues to be about ten times their present Value. These two Expedients for encreasing the Revenues of the Church, he represents as pernicious Designs, fit only to be practifed in Times of Popery, and fuch as the Layety ought never to confent to: From whence, and from what he faid before about Tithes, his L---dfh-p hath freely declared his Opinion, that the Clergy are rich enough, and that the least Addition to their Sublistence would be a Step towards Popery. Now it happens, that the two only Methods which could ever be thought on, with any Probability of Success, towards some reasonable Augmentation of Ecclefiastical Revenues, are here rejected by a B-sh-p, as a Means for introducing Popery; and the Nation

Nation publickly warned against them. Whereas, the Continuance of the Statute of Mortmain in sulf Force, after the Church had been so terribly stripped, appeared to her Majesty and the Kingdom a very unnecessary Hardship; upon which Account it was at several times relaxed by the Legislature. Now, as the Relaxation of that Statute is manifestly one of the Reasons which gives the B ---p those terrible Apprehensions of Popery coming on us; so I conceive another Gound of his Fears, is the Remission of the First-Fruits and Tenths. But where the Inclination to Popery lay, whether in her Majesty, who proposed this Benefaction, the Parliament which confirmed, or the Clergy who accepted it, his L—— p hath not thought fit to determine.

THE other Popish Expedient for augmenting Church Revenues, is engaging the Clergy to renew no Leases. Several of the most eminent Clergymen have affured me, that nothing hath been more wished for by good Men, than a Law to prevent (at least) Bishops from setting Leases for Lives. I could name ten Bishopricks in England, whose Revenues, one with another do not amount to 600 l. a Year for each: And, if his L----p, for Instance. would be above ten times the Value, when the Lives are expired, I should think the Overplus would not be ill disposed towards an Augmentation of fuch as are now shamefully poor. But I do affert, That fuch an Expedient was not always thought Popish and Dangerous by this Right Reverend Hi-Rorian. I have had the Honour formerly to converfe with him; and he hath told me feveral Years ago, that he lamented extremely the Power which Bishops had of letting Leases for Lives; whereby, as he faid, they were utterly deprived of raifing their Revenues, whatever Alterations might happen in the Value of Money by Length of Time: I think the Reproach of betraying private Conversation, will not, upon this Account, be laid to my Charge, Neither do I believe he would have changed his Opinion upon any Score, but to take up another more agreeable to the Maxims of his Party; that the least Addition of Property to the Church, is one

Step towards Popery.

THE B .-- p goes on with much Earnestness and Prolixity to prove, That the Pope's Confirmation of the Church Lands to those who held them by King Henry's Donation, was null and fraudulent, which is a Point that I believe no Protestant in England would give three Pence to have his Choice, whether it should be true or false: It might indeed ferve as a Paffage in his History, among a thousand other Instances, to detect the Knavery of the Court of Rome: But I ak, Where could be the Use of it in this Introduction? Or, why all this Hafte in publishing it at this Juncture; and so out of all Method, apart, and before the Work it felf? He gives his Reasons in very plain Terms, We are now, it feems, in more Danger of Popery than towards the End of King Charles the Second's Reign. That Set of Men (the Tories) is so impiously corrupted in the Point of Religion, that no Scene of Cruelty can fright them from leaping into it, and perhaps from afting such a Part in it as may be assigned them. He doubts whether the High Church Clergy have any Principles, and therefore will be ready to turn off their Wives, and look on the Fires kindled in Smithfield as an amiable View. These are the Facts he all along takes for granted, and argues accordingly; Therefore in Despair of disfluading the Nobility and Gentry of the Land, from introducing Popery by any Motives of Honour, Religion, Alliance or Mercy.

Mercy. He affures them, That the Pope hath not duly confirmed their Tythes to the Church Lands in their Possession; which therefore must be infallibly restored, as soon as that Religion is established a-

mong us.

Thus, in his L-p's Opinion, there is nothing wanting to make the Majority of the Kingdom, both for Number, Quality and Possession, immediately embrace Popery, except a firm Bull from the Pope to fecure the Abby and other Church Lands and Tythes to the present Proprietors and their Heirs: If this only Difficulty could now be adjusted, the Pretender would be restored next Seffion, the two Houses reconciled to the Church of Rome against Easter Term, and the Fires lighted in Smithfield by Midsummer. Such horrible Calumnies against a Nation are not the less injurious to Decency, Good Nature, Truth, Honour, and Religion, because they may be vented with Safety: And I will appeal to any Reader of common Understanding, whether this be not the most natural and necessary Deduction from the Passages I have cited and referred to.

YET, all this is but friendly Dealing, in Comparison with what he affords the Clergy upon the same Article. He supposes that whole Reverend Body, who differ from him in Principles of Church or State, so far from disliking Popery, upon the above mentioned Motives of Perjury, quitting their Wives, or burning their Relations: That, the Hopes of enjoying the Abbey Lands would soon bear down all such Considerations, and be an effectual Incitement to their Perversion: And so he goes gravely on, as with the only Argument, which he thinks can have any Force, to assure them; that the Parochial Priests in Roman Catholick Countries are much poorer than

than in ours; the several Orders of Regulars, and the Magnificence of their Church, devouring all their Treasure; and by Consequence, their Hopes are vain of expecting to be richer after the Introduction of Popery.

But after all, his L—p despairs, that even this Argument will have any Force with our abominable Clergy, because, to use his own Words, They are an insensible and degenerate Race, who are thinking of nothing but their present Advantages: And so that they may now support a luxurious and brutal Course of irregular and voluptuous Practices, they are easily bired to betray their Religion, to sell their Country, and to give up that Liberty and those Properties, which are the present Felicities and Glories of this Nation.

HE feems to reckon all these Evils as Matters fully determined on, and therefore falls into the last usual Forms of Despair by threatning the Authors of these Miseries with lasting Insamy, and the Curses of Posterity upon persidious Betrayers of their Trust.

Let me turn this Paragraph into vulgar Language for the Use of the Poor; and strictly adhere to the Sense of the Words. I believe it may be faithfully translated in the following Manner, The Bulk of the Clergy, and one Third of the Bishops are stupid Sons of Whores, who think of nothing but getting Money as soon as they can: If they may but procure enough to supply them in Gluttony, Drunkenness, and Whoring, they are ready to turn Traytors to God and their Country, and make their Fellow Subjects Slaves. The rest of the Period about threatning Insamy and the Curses of Posterity upon such Dogs and Villains, may stand as it doth in the B---p's own Phrase; and so make the Paragraph all of a Piece.

I WILL engage on the other Side, to paraphrase all the Rogues and Rascals in the Englishman, so as

But, for my own Part, I much prefer the plain Billingsgate Way of calling Names, because it expresses seth our Meaning sull as well, and would save abundance of Time which is lost by Circumlocution: So, for Instance, John Dunton, who is retained on the same Side with the B--p, calls my Lord Treasurer and Lord Bolingbroke, Traytors, Whoremongers, and Jacobites; which three Words cost our Right Reverend Author thrice as many Lines to define them; and I hope his L--p doth not think there is any Difference in point of Morality, whether a Man calls me Traitor in one Word, or says I am one bired to betray my Religion, and sell my

Country.

I AM not surprized to see the B-p mention with Contempt all Convocations of the Clergy; For Toland, Afgil, Monmouth, Collins, Tindal, and others of the Fraternity, talk the very same Language. p confesseth, he is not inclined to expest HisL much from the Assemblies of Clergymen. There lies the Misfortune: For, if he and some more of his Order would correct their Inclinations, a great deal of Good might be expected from fuch Affemblies; as much as they are now cramped by that Submiffion, which a corrupt Clergy brought upon their innocent Successors. He will not deny that bis Copiousness in these Matters is, in his own Opinion, one of the meanest Parts of his new Work. I will agree with him, unless he happens to be more copious in any Thing elfe. However, it is not easy to conceive why he should be so copious upon a Subject he fo much despiseth, unless it were to gratify his Talent of railing at the Clergy, in the Number of whom he disdains to be reckoned, because he is a B--p: For, it is a Stile I observe some Prelates have

have fallen into of late Years, to talk of Clergymen, as if themselves were not of the Number: You will read in many of their Speeches at Dr. Sacheverell's Tryal, Expressions to this or the like Effect: My Lords, if Clergymen be suffered, &c. wherein they feem to have Reason: And I am pretty confident, that a great Majority of the Clergy were heartily inclined to difown any Relation they had to the Managers in Lawn. However, is was a confounding Argument against Presbytery, to fee those Prelates, who are most suspected to lean that Way, treating their inferior Brethren with Haughtiness, Rigour, and Contempt; although to fay the Truth, nothing better could be hoped for; because, I believe, it may pass for an universal Rule, that in every Diocese governed by Bishops of the Whig Species, the Clergy (especially the . poorer Sort) are under double Discipline; and the Layety left to themselves. The Opinion of Sir Thomas Moore, which he produceth to prove the ill Confequences or Infignificancy of Convocations, advanceth no fuch Thing; but fays, If the Clergy afsembled often, and might att as other Assemblies of Clergy in Christendom, much Good might have come : But the Misfortune lay in their long Disuse, and that in bis own, and a good Part of bis Father's Time, they never came together, except at the Command of the Prince.

I SUPPOSE his L — p thinks, there is some original Impediment in the Study of Divinity, or secret Incapacity in a Gown and Cassock without Lawn, which disqualifies all inferior Clergymen from debating upon Subjects of Doctrine or Discipline in the Church. It is a famous Saying of his, That he looks upon every Layman to be an honest Man, until he is by Experience convinced to the con-

finds him to be an bonest Man. What Opinion then must we have of a lower House of Convocation; where, I am consident he will hardly find three Persons that over convinced him of their Honesty, or will ever be at the Pains to do it? Nay, I am afraid they would think such a Conviction might be no very advantageous Bargain, to gain the Character of an honest Man with his L——p, and lose it with the rest of the World.

In the famous Concordate that was made between Francis I. of France, and Pope Leo X. the B - p tells us, that the King and Pope came to a Bargain, by which they divided the Liberties of the Gallican Church between them, and indeed quite enflaved it. He intends, in the third Part of his History which he is going to publish, to open this whole Matter to the World. In the mean Time, he mentions some ill Confequences to the Gallican Church from that Concordate, which are worthy to be observed; the Church of France became a Slave, and this Change in their Constitution put an End, not only to National, but even to Provincial Synods in that Kingdom. Assemblies of the Clergy there, meet now only to give Subsidies, &c. and he says, our Nation may see by that Proceeding, what it is to deliver up the effential Liberties of a free Constitution to a Court.

ALL I can gather from this Matter is, That our King Henry made a better Bargain than his Contemporary Francis, who divided the Liberties of the Church between himself and the Pope, while the King of England seized them all to himself. But, how comes he to number the Want of Synods in the Gallican Church, among the Grievances of that Concordate, and as a Mark of their Slavery, since he reckons all Convocations of the Clergy in Eng-

band

land to be useless and dangerous? Or, what Difference in Point of Liberty was there between the Gallican Church under Francis, and the English under Harry? For, the latter was as much a Papist as the former, unless in the Point of Obedience to the See of Rome; and in every Quality of a good Man, or a good Prince (except personal Courage wherein both were equal) the French Monarch had the Advantage by as many Degrees as is possible for one Man to have over another.

HENRY VIII. had no Manner of Intention to change Religion in his Kingdom; he continued to persecute and burn Protestants after he had cast off the Pope's Supremacy: And, I suppose, his Seizure of Ecclefiastical Revenues (which Francis never attempted) cannot be reckoned as a Mark of the Church's Liberty. By the Quotations the B-p fets down to shew the Slavery of the French Church, he represents it as a Grievance, that Bishops are not now elected there as formerly, but wholly appointed by the Prince; and that those made by the Court bave been ordinarily the chief Advancers of Schisms, Herefies, and Oppressions of the Church. He cites another Passage from a Greek Writer, and plainly infinuates, that it is justly applicable to her Majesty's Reign: Princes chuse such Men to that Charge (of a Bishop) who may be their Slaves, and in all Things obsequious to what they prescribe; and may lie at their Feet, and have not so much as a Thought contrary to their Commands.

THESE are very fingular Passages for his L---p to set down in order to shew the dismal Confequences of the French Concordate, by the Slavery of the Gallican Church, compared with the Freedom of ours. I shall not enter into a long Dispute, whether it were better for Religion, that Bishops

should

frould be chosen by the Clergy, or People, or both together: I believe our Author would give his Vote for the fecond: (which however would not have been of much Advantage to himself and some others that I could name.) But I ask, whether Bishops are any more elected in England than in France? And the Want of Synods are in his own Opinion, rather a Bleffing than a Grievance, unless he will affirm, that more Good can be expected from a Popish Synod, than an English Convocation. Did the French Clergy ever receive a greater Blow to their Liberties, than the Submission made to Henry VIII. or fo great a one as the Serzure of their Lands? The Reformation owed nothing to the good Intentions of King Henry: He was only an Instrument of it, (as the Logicians speak) by Accident; nor doth he appear throughout his whole Reign, to have had any other Views, than those of gratifying his insatiable Love of Power, Cruelty, Oppression, and other irregular Appetites. But this Kingdom, as well as many other Parts of Europe, was at that Time generally weary of the Corruptions and Impositions of the Roman Court and Church; and disposed to receive those Doctrines. which Luther and his Followers had univerfally spread. Cranmer the Archbishop, Cromwell, and others of the Court, did fecretly embrace the Reformation; and the King's abrogating the Pope's Supremacy, made the People in general run into the new Doctrines with greater Freedom, because they hoped to be supported in it, by the Authority and Example of their Prince; who disappointed them fo far, that he made no other Step, than rejecting the Pope's Supremacy, as a Clog upon his own Power and Paffions; but retained every Corruption beside, and became a cruel Persecutor, as well of those those who denied his own Supremacy, as of all others who professed any Protestant Doctrine. Neither hath any Thing disgusted me more in reading the Histories of those Times, than to see one of the worst Princes of any Age or Country, celebrated as

an Instrument in that glorious Work of the Refor-

mation.

THE B--p having gone over all the Matters, that properly fall within his Introduction, proceeds to expostulate with several Sorts of People: First, with Protestants, who are no Christians, such as Atheists, Deists, Free-thinkers, and the like Enemies to Christianity: But these he treats with the Tenderness of a Friend, because they are all of them of found Whig-Principles in Church and State. However, to do him Justice, he lightly toucheth some old Topicks for the Truth of the Gospel; and concludes by wishing that the Freethinkers would consider well, If (Anglice, whether) they think it is possible to bring a Nation to be without any Religion at all; and what the Consequences of that may prove; and, in Case they allow the Negative, he gives it clearly for Christianity.

SECONDLY, He applieth himself (if I take his Meaning right) to Christian Papists, who have a Taste of Liberty; and desires them to compare the Absurdities of their own Religion with the Reasonable-ness of the Resonable-ness of the Resonable-ness of the Resonable-

would have it, I have nothing to object.

THIRDLY, He is somewhat rough against his own Party; who baving tasted the Sweets of Protestant Liberty, can look back so tamely on Popery coming on them; it looks as if they were bewitched, or that the Devil were in them, to be so negligent. It is not enough, that they resolve not to turn Papists themselves: They ought to awaken all about them,

even the most ignorant and stupid, to apprehend their Danger, and to exert themselves with their utmost Industry to guard against it, and to resist it. If after all their Endeavours to prevent it, the Corruption of the Age, and the Art and Power of our Enemies, prove too hard for us; then, and not until then, we must submit to the Will of God, and be silent; and prepare ourselves for all the Extremities of Suffering and of Misery; with a great deal more of the same Strain.

WITH due Submission to the profound Sagacity of this P--l-e, who can fmell Popery at five hundred Miles distance, better than Fanaticism just under his Nose; I take Leave to tell him, that this Reproof to his Friends, for want of Zeal and Clamour against Popery, Slavery, and the Pretender, is what they have not deferved. Are the Pamphlets and Papers daily published by the sublime Authors of his Party, full of any Thing elfe? Are not the QUEEN, the Ministers, the Majority of Lords and Commons, loudly taxed in print with this Charge against them at full Length? Is it not the perpetual Eccho of every Whig Coffee-House and Club? Have they not quartered Popery and the Pretender upon the Peace and Treaty of Commerce; upon the possessing, and quitting, and keeping, and demolishing of Dunkirk? Have they not clamoured because the Pretender continued in France, and because he left it? Have they not reported, that the Town swarmed with many thousand Papists; when upon Search, there were never found fo few of that Religion in it before? If a Clergyman preacheth Obedience to the higher Powers, is he not immediately traduced as a Papist? Can mortal Man do more? To deal plainly, my L--d, your Friends are not strong enough yet to make an Infurrection.

furrection, and it is unreasonable to expect one from

them, until their Neighbours be ready.

My L.-d, I have a little Seriousness at Heart upon this Point, where your Lordship affects to thew fo much. When you can prove, that one fingle Word hath ever dropt from any Minister of State. in publick or private, in Favour of the Pretender, or his Cause. When you can make it appear, that in the Course of this Administration, since the QUEEN thought fit to change her Servants, there hath one Step been made towards weakening the Hanover Title, or giving the least Countenance to any other whatfoever; then, and not until then, go dry your Chaff and Stubble, give Fire to the Zeal of your Faction, and reproach them with Luke-warmness.

FOURTHLY, The B--- p applies himself to the Tories in general; taking it for granted, after his charitable Manner, that they are all ready prepared to introduce Popery: He puts an Excuse into their Mouths, by which they would endeavour to justify their Change of Religion: Popery is not what it was before the Reformation: Things are now much mended; and further Corrections might be expetted. if we would enter into a Treaty with them : In particular, they fee the Error of proceeding severely with Hereticks; so that there is no Reason to apprehend she Returns of such Cruelties as were prastised an Age and a Half ago.

This he affures us, is a Plea, offered by the Tories, in defence of themselves, for going about at this Juncture to establish the Popish Religion among us: What Argument doth he bring to prove the Fact it self? Quibus indiciis, quo teste probavit? Nil borum: Verbosa & grandis epistola venit. Nothing but this tedious Introduction, wherein he supposeth it all along as a Thing granted. That there

VOL. VI. might

might be a perfect Union in the whole Christian Church, is a Bleffing which every good Man wisheth, but no reasonable Man can hope. That the more polite Roman Catholicks have in feveral Places given up some of their superstitious Fopperies, particularly concerning Legends, Relicks, and the like, is what no Body denies. But the material Points in difference between us and them, are univerfally retained and afferted, in all their controverfial Writings. And, if his L---p really think that every Man who differs from him under the Name of a Tory in some Church and State Opinions, is ready to believe Transubstantiation, Purgatory, the Infallibility of Popes or Councils, to worship Saints and Angels, and the like; I can only pray Gop to enlighten his Understanding, or graft in his Heart the first Principles of Charity; a Virtue which some People ought not by any Means wholly to renounce, because it covereth a Multitude of Sins.

FIFTHLY, The B --- p applies himself to his own Party in both Houses of Parliament, whom he exhorts to guard their Religion and Liberty against all Danger at what Distance soever it may appear. If they are absent and remiss on critical Occasions, That is to fay, If they do not attend close next Selfions, to voteuponall Occasions whatsoever, against the Proceedings of the QUEEN and her Ministry: Or, if any Views of Advantage to themselves prevail on them. In other Words. If any of them vote for the Bill of Commerce, in hopes of a Place, or a Pension, a Title, or a Garter; God may work a Deliverance for us another Way. That is to fay, by inviting the Dutch: But they and their Families; i. e. Those who are negligent or Revolters, shall perish, by which is meant; they shall be hanged as well as the present Ministry

much

Ministry and their Abettors, as soon as we recover our Power. Because they let in Idolatry, Superstition, and Tyranny. Because they stood by and suffered the Peace to be made, the Bill of Commerce to pass, and Dunkirk lie undemolished longer than

we expected, without raifing a Rebellion.

His last Application is to the Tory Clergy, a Parcel of blind, ignorant, dumb, sleeping, greedy, drunken Dogs. A pretty artful Episcopal Method is this, of calling his Brethren as many injurious Names as he pleafeth. It is but quoting a Text of Scripture, where the Characters of evil Men are described, and the Thing is done; and at the same Time the Appearances of Piety and Devotion pre-I would engage, with the Help of a good Concordance, and the Liberty of perverting Holy Writ, to find out as many injurious Appellations, as the Englishman throws out in any of his politick Papers; and apply them to those Persons, who call Good, Evil; and Evil, Good; to those who cry without Cause, Every Man to his Tents, O Israel ! And to those who curse the Queen in their Hearts!

These decent Words he tells us, make up a lively Description of such Pastors, as will not study Controversy, nor know the Depths of Satan. He means, I suppose, the Controversy between us and the Papists; for as to the Free-thinkers and Dissenters of every Denomination, they are some of the best Friends to the Cause. Now, I have been told, there is a Body of that Kind of Controversy published by the London Divines, which is not to be matched in the World. I believe likewise, there is a good Number of the Clergy at present, thoroughly versed in that Study; after which, I cannot but give my Judgment, that it would be a very idle Thing for Pastors in general to busy themselves

G 2

much in Disputes against Popery: It being a dry heavy Employment of the Mind at best; especially when, God be thanked, there is so little Occasion for it in the generality of Parishes throughout the Kingdom, and must be daily less and less by the just Severity of the Laws, and the utter Aversion of our People from that Idolatrous Superstition.

Ir I might be fo bold to name those, who have the Honour to be of his L---p's Party, I would venture to tell him, That Pastors have much more Occasion to study Controversies against the several Classes of Free-thinkers and Dissenters: The former (I beg his L---p's Pardon for faying fo) being a little worse than Papists, and both of them more dangerous at present to our Constitution both in Church and State. Not that I think Presbytery so corrupt a System of Christian Religion as Popery; I believe it is not above one Third as bad: But I think the Presbyterians, and their Clans of other Fanaticks of Free-thinkers and Atheists, that dangle after them. are as well inclined to pull down the present Establishment of Monarchy and Religion, as any Sett of Papifts in Christendom; and therefore that our Danger, as Things now stand, is infinitely greater from our Protestant Enemies; because they are much more able to ruin us, and full as willing. no doubt, but Presbytery and a Commonwealth are less formidable Evils than Popery, Slavery, and the Pretender; for, if the Fanaticks were in Power, I should be in more Apprehension of being starved than burned: But there are probably in England forty Diffenters of all Kinds, including their Breibren the Free-thinkers, for one Papist; and allowing one Papist to be as terrible as three Dissenters, it will appear by Arithmetick, that we are thirteen Times and one Third more in Danger of being ruined by the latter than the former. THE

THE other Qualification necessary for all Pastors, if they will not be blind, ignorant, greedy, drunken Dogs, &c. is, to know the Depths of Satan. This is harder than the former; that a poor Gentleman ought not to be Parson, Vicar, or Curate of a Parish, except he be cunninger than the Devil. am afraid it will be difficult to remedy this Defect for one manifest Reason, because whoever had only half the Cunning of the Devil, would never take up with a Vicarage of ten Pounds a Year, to live on at his Ease, as my L--d expresseth it; but seek out for some better Livelihood. His Lordship is of a Nation very much diffinguished for that Quality of Cunning, (although they have a great many better) and I think he was never accused for wanting his Share, However, upon a Tryal of Skill, I would venture to lay fix to four on the Devil's Side. who must be allowed to be at least the older Practitioner. Telling Truth shames him, and Resistance makes him fly: But to attempt out-witting him, is to fight him at his own Weapon, and confequently no Cunning at all. Another Thing I would obferve is, that a Man may be in the Depths of Satan, without knowing them all; and fuch a Man may be so far in Satan's Depths, as to be out of his own. One of the Depths of Satan is to counterfeit an Angel Another, I believe, is to ftir up the Peoof Light. ple against their Governors, by false Suggestions of A third, is to be a Prompter to false Brethren, and to fend Wolves about in Sheeps Cloathing. Sometimes he fends Jesuits about England in the Habit and Cant of Fanaticks; at other Times he hath Fanatick Missionaries in the Habits of --I shall mention but one more of Satan's Depths; for I confess I know not the Hundredth Part of them; and that is to employ his Emissaries in crying

ing out against remote imaginary Dangers, by which we may be taken off from defending our selves against those, which are really just at our Elbows.

But his Lordship draws towards a Conclusion, and bids us look about, to consider the Danger we are in, before it is too late; for he affures us, we are already going into some of the worst Parts of Popery; like the Man, who was so much in haste for his new Coat, that he put it on the wrong Side out. Auricular Confession, Priestly Absolution, and the Sacrifice of the Mass, have made great Progress in England, and no Body hath observed it: Several other Popish Points are carried bigher with us, than by the Priests themselves. And some Body it seems had the Impudence to propose an Union with the Gallican Church. I have indeed heard that Mr. Lefly published a Discourse to that Purpose, which I have never feen; nor do I perceive the Evil in proposing an Union between any two Churches in Christendom. Without doubt, Mr. Lefly is most unhappily misled in his Politicks; but if he be the Author of the late Tract against Popery, he hath given the World fuch a Proof of his Soundness in Religion, as many a Bishop ought to be proud of. I never saw the Gentleman in my Life: I know he is the Son of a great and excellent Prelate, who, upon feveral Accounts, was one of the most extraordinary Men of Mr. Lefly hath written many useful Difcourses upon several Subjects, and hath so well deferved of the Christian Religion, and the Church of England in particular, that to accuse him of Impudence for proposing an Union in two very different Faiths, is a Stile which I hope few will imitate. I detest Mr. Lesly's Political Principles as much as his L---p can do for his Heart; but I verily believe

lieve he acts from a mistaken Conscience, and therefore I distinguish between the Principles and the Person. However, it is some Mortification to me, when I see an avowed Nonjuror contribute more to the consounding of Popery, than could ever be done by a hundred thousand such Introductions as this.

His L - p ends with discovering a small Ray of Comfort. God be thanked there are many among us that stand upon the Watch-Tower, and that give faithful Warning; that stand in the Breach, and make themselves a Wall for their Church and Country; that cry to God Day and Night, and lie in the Dust mourning before him, to avert those Judgments that seem to basten towards us. They search into the Mystery of Iniquity that is working among us, and acquaint themselves with all that Mass of Corruption that is in Popery. He prays, That the Number of these may encrease, and that he may be of that Number, ready either to die in Peace, or to feal that Doctrine he bath been preaching above fifty Years, with his Blood. This being his last Paragraph, I have made bold to tranfcribe the most important Parts of it. His Defign is to end after the Manner of Orators, with leaving the strongest Impression possible upon the Minds of his Hearers. A great Breach is made; the Mystery of Popils Iniquity is working among us; may God avert those Judgments that are bastening towards us: am an old Man, a Preacher above fifty Years, and I now expect and am ready to die a Martyr for the Doctrines I have preached. What an amiable Idea doth he here leave upon our Minds, of her Majesty, and her Government! He hath been poring fo long upon Fox's Book of Martyrs, that he imagines himtelf living in the Reign of Queen Mary, and is refolved to fet up for a Knight-Errant against Popery. Upon the Supposition of his being in Earnest, (which I am fure he is not) it would require but a very fittle more Heat of Imagination, to make a History of fuch a Knight's Adventures. What would he fay, to behold the Fires kindled in Smithfield, and all over the Town, on the seventeenth of November; to behold the Pope born in Triumph on the Shoulders of the People, with a Cardinal on the one Side, and the Pretender on the other? He would never believe it was Queen Elizabeth's Day, but that of her persecuting Sister: In short, how easily might a Windmill be taken for the Whore of Babylon, and a Puppet-

Show for a Popish Procession?

But Enthusiasm is none of his L - p's Faculty: I am inclined to believe he might be melancholly enough when he writ this Introduction: The Defpair at his Age of feeing a Faction reftored, to which he hath facrificed fo great a Part of his Life: The little Success he can hope for in Case he should refume those High Church Principles, in the Defence of which he first employed his Pen: No visible Expectation of removing to Farnham or Lambeth: And laftly, the Misfortune of being hated by every one, who either wears the Habit, or values the Profession of a Clergyman: No wonder such a Spirit, in fuch a Situation, is provoked beyond the Regards of Truth, Decency, Religion, or Self-Conviction. To do him Justice, he seems to have nothing else left, but to cry out Halters, Gibbets, Faggots, Inquifition, Popery, Slavery, and the Pretender. But in the mean Time, he little confiders what a World of Mischief he doth to his Cause. It is very convenient, for the present Designs of that Faction, to fpread the Opinion of our immediate Danger from Popery and the Pretender. His Directors therefore ought, in my humble Opinion, to have employed his L — p in publishing a Book, wherein he should

fhould have afferted, by the most solemn Asseverations, that all things were safe and well: For, the World hath contracted so strong a Habit of believing him backwards, that I am consident nine Parts in ten of those who have read or heard of his Introduction, have slept in greater Security ever since. It is like the melancholy Tone of a Watchman at Midnight, who thumps with his Pole, as if some Thief were breaking in; but you know by

the Noise, that the Door is fast.

However, he thanks God, there are many among us who stand in the Breach: I believe they may; it is a Breach of their own making, and they defign to come forward, and ftorm and plunder, if they be not driven back. They make themselves a Wall for their Church and Country. South Wall, I suppose, for all the best Fruit of the Church and Country to be nailed on. Let us examine this Metaphor: The Wall of our Church and Country is built of those, who love the Constitution in Our domestic Enemies undermine some Parts of the Wall, and place themselves in the Breach; and then they cry, We are the Wall. We do not like fuch Patch-Work; they build with untempered Mortar; nor can they ever cement with us, till they get better Materials and better Workmen: God keep us from having our Breaches made up with fuch Rubbish. They stand upon the Watchtower! They are indeed pragmatical enough to do so; but who assigned them that Post, to give us false Intelligence, to alarm us with false Dangers, and fend us to defend one Gate, while their Accomplices are breaking in at another? They cry to God Day and Night to avert the Judgment of Popery, which seems to hasten towards us. Then I affirm, they are Hypocrites by Day, and filthy Dreamers by Night.

Night. When they cry unto him, he will not hear them: For they cry against the plainest Dictates of

their own Conscience, Reason, and Belief.

But lastly, They lye in the Dust, mourning before bim. Hang me, if I believe that, unless it be figuratively spoken. But suppose it to be true, Why do they lye in the Dust? Because they love to raise it; for what do they mourn? Why, for Power, Wealth and Places. There let the Enemies of the Queen and Monarchy, and the Church lie and mourn, and lick the Dust like Serpents, till they are truly sensible of their Ingratitude, Falshood, Disobelience, Slander, Blasphemy, Sedition, and every evil Work.

I CANNOT find in my Heart to conclude without offering his L----p a little humble Advice upon fome certain Points.

FIRST, I would advise him, if it be not too late in his Life, to endeavour a little at mending his Style, which is mighty defective in the Circumstances of Grammar, Propriety, Politeness and Smoothness. I fancyed at first, it might be owing to the Prevalence of his Passion, as People sputter out Nonfense for Haste, when they are in a Rage. And indeed, I believe this Piece before me hath received fome additional Imperfections from that Occasion. But whoever hath heard his Sermons, or read his other Tracts, will find him very unhappy in the Choice and Disposition of his Words, and, for want of Variety, repeating them, especially the Particles, in a Manner very grating to an English Ear. But I confine my felf to this Introduction, as his last Work, where endeavouring at Rhetorical Flowers, he gives us only Bunches of THISTLES; of which I could present the Reader with a plentiful Crop; but I refer him to every Page and Line

of the Pamphlet itself.

SECONDLY, I would most humbly advise his Lordship to examine a little into the Nature of Truth, and fometimes to hear what She fays. I shall produce two Instances among an hundred. When he afferts, That we are now in more Danger of Popery than towards the End of King Charles the Second's Reign; and gives the broadest Hints, that the QUEEN, the Ministry, the Parliament, and the Clergy are just a going to introduce it; I defire to know, whether he really thinks Truth is of his Side, or whether he be not fure She is against him: If the latter, then Truth and he would be found in two different Stories; and which are we to believe? Again, when he gravely advises the Tories not to light the Fires in Smithfield; and goes on in twenty Places already quoted, as if the Bargain were made for Popery and Slavery to enter: I ask again, whether he hath rightly confidered the Nature of Truth? I desire to put a parallel Case. Suppose his L---p should take it into his Fancy to write and publish a Letter to any Gentleman of no infamous Character for his Religion or Morals? and there advise him with great Earnestness, not to rob or fire Churches, ravish his Daughter, or murder his Father; shew him the Sin and the Danger of these Enormities; That, if he flattered himself he could escape in Disguife, or bribe his Jury, he was grievously mistaken: That he must in all Probability forfeit his Goods and Chattles, die an ignominious Death, and be curft by Posterity: Would not such a Gentleman justly think himself highly injured, although his L----p did not affirm, that the faid Gentleman had Picklocks or Combustibles ready; that he

had attempted his Daughter, and drawn his Sword against his Father in order to stab him? Whereas in the other Case, this Writer affirms over and over, that all Attempts for introducing Popery and Slavery are already made, the whole Business concerted, and that little less than a Miracle can prevent our Ruin.

THIRDLY, I could heartily wish his Lordship would not undertake to charge the Opinions of one or two, and those probably Nonjurors, upon the whole Body of the Nation, that differs from him. Mr. Lefly writ a Proposal for an Union with the Gallican Church; fomebody else hath carried the Necessity of Priestbood in the Point of Baptism farther than Popery: A third hath afferted the Independency of the Church on the State, and in many things arraigned the Supremacy of the Crown: Then he speaks in a dubious infinuating Way, as if some other Popish Tenets had been already advanced: And at last concludes in this affected Strain of Despondency, What will all these Things end in! And on what Design are they driven! Alas, it is too visible. as clear as the Sun, that these Authors are encouraged by the Ministry with a Defign to bring in Poopery; and in Popery all these Things will End.

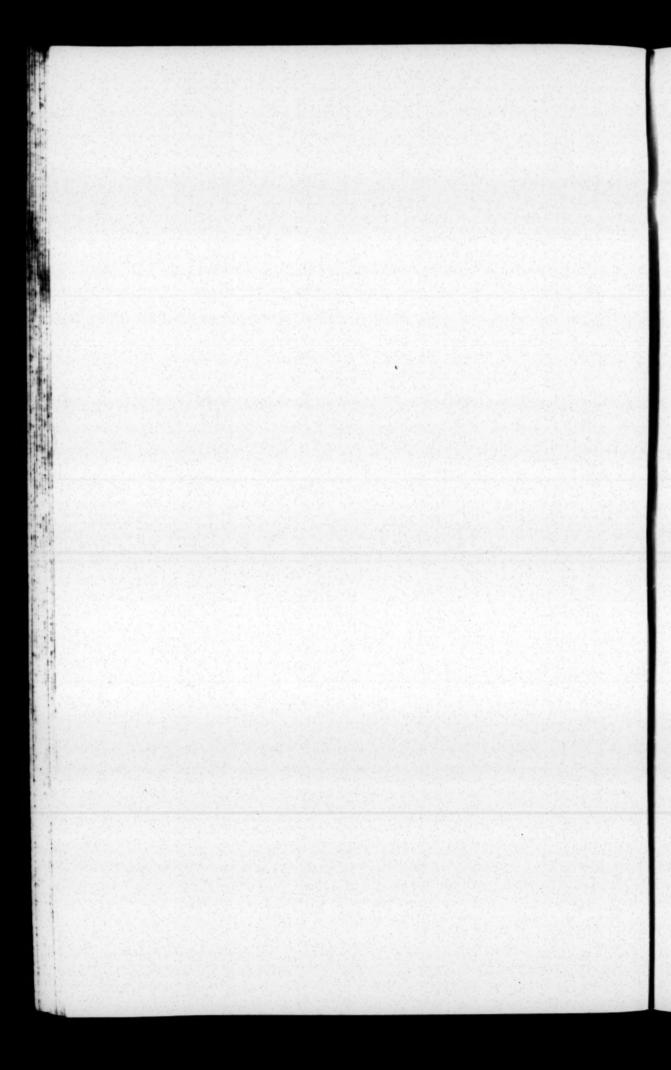
I NEVER was so uncharitable to believe, That the whole Party of which his L.----p professesh himself a Member, had a real formed Design of establishing Atheism among us. The Reason why the Whigs have taken the Atheists or Free-thinkers into their Body, is because they wholly agree in their political Schemes, and differ very little in Church Power and Discipline. However I could turn the Argument against his Lordship with very great Advantage, by quoting Passages from sity Pamphlets wholly made made up of Whigism and

Atheism,

Atheism, and then conclude: What will all these things end in? And on what Design are they driven?

Alas, it is too visible.

LASTLY, I would beg his L---p not to be fo exceedingly outrageous upon the Memory of the Dead; because it is highly probable; that in a very short time he will be one of the Number. He hath in plain Words given Mr. Wharton the Character of a most malicious, revengeful, treacherous, lying, mercenary Villain. To which I shall only fay, That the direct Reverse of this amiable Description, is what appears from the Works of that most learned Divine; and from the Accounts given me by those, who knew him much better than the B----p feems to have done. I meddle not with the moral Part of this Treatment. God Almighty forgive his L----p this Manner of revenging himself: And then there will be but little Consequence from an Accusation, which the Dead cannot feel, and which none of the Living will believe.



THE

Presbyterians P L E A

OF

MERIT

In Order to take off the

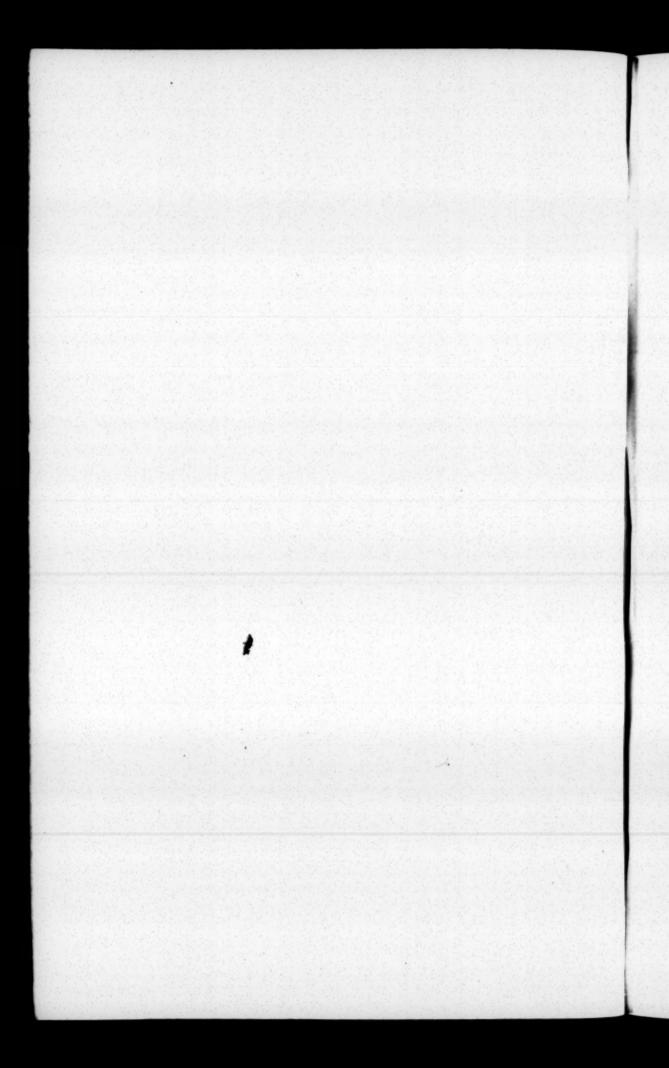
TEST,

Impartially Examined.



DUBLIN:

Printed by and for GEORGE FAULENER!



THE

Presbyterians PLEA

OF

MERIT, &c.

Papers, that all Attempts are to be made this Sessions by the Presbyterians, and their Abettors, for taking off the Test; as a Kind of preparatory Step, to make it go down smoother in England. For, if once thier Light would so shine, the Papists, delighted with the Blaze, would all come in, and dance about it. This I take to be a prudent Method; like that of a discreet Physician, who first gives a new Medicine to a Dog, before he prescribes it to a human Creature.

THE Presbyterians have, ever fince the Revolution, directed their learned Casuists to employ their Pens on this Subject; by shewing the Merits and Pretensions upon which they claim this Justice; as founded upon the Services they did towards the Restoration of King Charles the Second; and at the Revolution, under the Prince of Orange. Which Pleas I take to be the most singular, in their Kind, Vol. VI.

that ever were offered in the Face of the Sun, a gainst the most glaring Light of Truth, and against a Continuation of publick Facts, known to all Europe for twenty Years together. I shall, therefore, impartially examine the Merits and Conduct of the Presbyterians, upon those two great Events; and the Pretensions to Favour, which they chal-

lenge upon them.

Soon after the Reformation of the Church in England, under Edward the Sixth, upon Queen Mary's fucceeding to the Crown, who reftored Popery; many Protestants fled out of England, to efcape the Persecution raised against the Church, as her Brother had left it established. Some of these Exiles went to Geneva; which City had received the Doctrine of Calvin, and rejected the Government of Bishops; with many other Refinements. These English Exiles readily embraced the Geneva System; and having added further Improvements of their own, upon Queen Mary's Death, returned to England; where they preached up their new Opinions; inveighing bitterly against Episcopacy, and all Rites and Ceremonies, however innocent and ancient in the Church: Building upon this Foundation; to run as far as possible from Popery, even in the most minute and indifferent Circumstances: This Faction, under the Name of Puritan, became very turbulent, during the whole Reign of Queen Elizabeth, and were always discouraged by that wise Queen, as well as by her two Succeffors. ever, their Numbers, as well as their Infolence and Perverseness, so far increased, that soon after the Death of King James the First, many Instances of their Petulancy and Scurrility, are to be feen in their Pamphlets, written for some Years after; which was a Trade they began in the Days of Queen

Queen Elizabeth: Particularly with great Rancour against the Bishops, the Habits, and the Ceremonies: Such were those scurrilous Libels under the Title of Martin Mar-Prelate, and several others: And, although the Earl of Clarendon tells us, until the Year 1640, (as I remember) the Kingdom was in a State of perfect Peace and Happiness, without the least Appearance of Thought or Defign, towards making any Alterations in Religion or Government; yet I have found, by often rumaging for old Books in Little Britain and Duck-lane, a great Number of Pamphlets printed from the Year 1630 to 1640, full of as bold and impious railing Expressions, against the lawful Power of the Crown, and the Order of Bishops, as ever were uttered during the Rebellion, or the whole subsequent Tyranny of that Fanatick Anarchy. However, I find it manifest, that Puritanism did not erect it self into a new feparate Species of Religion, till fome Time after the Rebellion began. For, in the latter Times of King James the First, and the former Part of his Son, there were feveral Puritan Bishops, and many Puritan private Clergymen; while People went, as their Inclinations led them, to hear Preachers of each Party in the Parish Churches. For, the Puritan Clergy had received Episcopal Orders as well as the rest. But, soon after the Rebellion broke out, the Term Puritan gradually dropt; and that of Presbyterian succeeded; which Sect was, in two or three Years, established in all its Forms, by what they call an Ordinance of the Lords and Commons, without confulting the King, who was then at War against his Rebels. And, from this Period, the Church continued under Perfecution until Monarchy was restored in the Year 1660. H 2 IN

In a Year or two after, we began to hear of a new Party risen, and growing in the Parliament, as well as the Army; under the Name of Independent: It spread, indeed, somewhat more in the latter; but not equal with the Presbyterians, either in Weight or Number, until some Time before

the King was murdered.

WHEN the King, who was then a Prisoner in the Isle of Wight, had made his last Concessions for a Peace to the Commissioners of the Parliament, who attended him there; upon their Return to London, they reported his Majesty's Answer in the House. Whereupon, a Number of moderate Members, who, as Ludlow fays, had fecured their own Terms with that Prince, managed with fo much Art, as to obtain a Majority, in a thin House, for passing a Vote, that the King's Concessions were a Ground for a future Settlement. But the great Officers of the Army, joining with the difcontented Members, came to a Resolution, of excluding all those who had consented to that Vote; which they executed in a military Way. told Fairfax the General, a rigid Presbyterian, of this Resolution; who thereupon issued his Orders for drawing out the Army the next Morning, and placing Guards in Westminster Hall, the Court of Requests, and the Lobby; who, in Obedience to the General, in Conjunction with those Members who had opposed the Vote, would let no Member enter the House, except those of their own Party. Upon which, the Question for bringing the King to Justice, was immediately put and carried, without Opposition, that I can find. Then, an Order was made for his Tryal; the Time and Place appointed; the Judges named; of whom Fairfax himself was one; although by the Advice, or Threats

Threats of his Wife, he declined fitting among them. However, by fresh Orders under his own Hand, which I have seen in Print, he appointed Guards to attend the Judges at the Tryal, and to keep the City in Quiet; as he did likewise to prevent any Opposition from the People, upon the

Day of Execution.

FROM what I have already deduced, it appears. manifest, that the Differences between those two Sects, Presbyterian and Independent, did not then amount to half so much as what there is between a Whig and Tory at present among us. The Design of utterly extirpating Monarchy and Episcopacy, was equally the fame in both; evidently the Consequence of the very same Principles, upon which the Presbyterians alone began, continued, and would have ended in the fame Events; if towards the Conclusion they had not been bearded by that new Party, with whom they could not agree about dividing the Spoil. However, they held a good Share of Civil and Military Employments during the whole Time of the Usurpation; whose Names, and Actions, and Preferments, are frequent in the Accounts of those Times. For, I make no Doubt, that all the prudent Presbyterians complied in proper Seasons, falling in with the Stream; and thereby got that Share in Employments, which many of them held to the Restoration; and, perhaps, too many of them after. In the fame Manner, we find our wifest Tories, in both Kingdoms, upon the Change of Hands and Measures at the Queen's Death, have endeavoured for feveral Years, by due Compliances, to recover the Time they had lost by a temporary Obstinacy; wherein they have well succeeded, according to their Degrees of Merit. Of whose Names I could here make honourable

able mention, if I did not fear it might offend

their Modesty.

As to what is alledged, that some of the Presbyterians declared openly against the King's Murder: I allow it to be true. But, from what Motives? No other can possibly be assigned than perfect Spight, Rage, and Envy, to find themselves wormed out of all Power, by a new infant Spawn of Independants, sprung from their own Bowels. It is true, the Differences in religious Tenets between them, are very few and trifling; the chief Quarrel, as far as I remember, relating to Congregational and National Affemblies. But, wherever Interest or Power think fit to interfere, it little imports what Principles the opposite Parties think fit to charge upon each other: For, we see, at this Day, that the Tories are more hated by the whole Set of zealous Whigs, than the very Papifts themselves; and, in Effect, as much unqualified for the smallest Office: Although, both these Parties affert themselves to be of the same Religion, in all its Branches of Doctrine and Discipline; and profess the same Loyalty to the same Protestant King. and his Heirs.

Ir the Reader would know what became of this Independant Party, upon whom all the Mischies is charged by their Presbyterian Brethren; he may please to observe, that during the whole Usurpation, they contended by Degrees with their Parent Sect, and, as I have already said, shared in Employments; and gradually, after the Restoration, mingled with the Mass of Presbyterians; lying ever since undistinguished in the Herd of Dissenters.

The Presbyterian Merit is of as little Weight, when they alledge themselves instrumental towards the King's Restoration. The Kingdom grew tired

with those ridiculous Models of Government: First. by a House of Lords and Commons, without a then without Bishops; afterwards by a Rump and Lords Temporal; then by a Rump alone: Next, by a fingle Person for Life, in Conjunction with a Council: By Agitators: By Major-Generals: By a new Kind of Representatives from the three Kingdoms: By the Keepers of the Liberties of England; with other Schemes that have flipt out of my Memory. Cromwell was dead; his Son Richard, a weak, ignorant Wretch, who gave up his Monarchy much in the fame Manner with the two usurping Kings of Brentford. The People, haraffed with Taxes, and other Oppressions; the King's Party, then called the Cavaliers, began to recover their Spirits. The few Nobility scattered through the Kingdom, who lived in a most retired Manner, observing the Confusion of Things, could no longer endure to be ridden by Bakers, Coblers, Brewers, and the like, at the Head of Armies; and plundering every where like French Dragoons: The Rump Affembly grew despicable to those who had raised them. The City of London, exhausted by almost twenty Years contributing to their own Ruin, declared against them. The Rump, after many Deaths and Refurrections, was, in the most contemptuous Manner, kick't out, and burnt in Effigy. The excluded Members were let in: A free Parliament called in as legal a Manner as the Times would allow; and the King restored.

THE second Claim of Presbyterian Merit, is founded upon their Services against the dangerous Designs of King James the Second; while that Prince was using all his Endeavours to introduce Popery, which he openly professed upon his coming

to the Crown: To this they add, their eminent Services at the Revolution, under the Prince of

Orange.

Now, the Quantum of Presbyterian Merit, during the four Years Reign of that weak, bigotted, and ill-advised Prince, as well as at the Time of the Revolution, will easily be computed, by a Recourse to a great Number of Histories, Pamphlets, and publick Papers, printed in those Times, and some afterwards; beside the Verbal Testimonies of many Persons yet alive, who are old enough to have known and observed the Dissenters Conduct in that critical Period.

IT is agreed, that upon King Charles the Second's Death, foon after his Successor had publickly owned himself a Roman Catholick; he began with his first Caresses to the Church Party; from whom having received very cold discouraging Anfwers; he applied to the Presbyterian Leaders and Teachers; being advised by his Priests and Popish Courtiers, that the fafest Method towards introducing his own Religion, would be by taking off the Sacramental Test, and giving a full Liberty of Conscience to all Religions, (I suppose that professed Christianity.) It seems, that the Presbyterians, in the latter Years of King Charles the Second, upon Account of certain Plots, (allowed by Bishop Burnet to be genuine) had been, for a short Time, forbid to hold their Conventicles. Whereupon, these charitable Christians, out of perfect Resentment against the Church, received the gracious Offers of King James with the strongest Professions of Loyalty, and highest Acknowledgments for his Favour. I have seen several of their Addresses, full of Thanks and Praises, with bitter Infinuations of what they had fuffered; putting themselves and the

the Papists upon the same Foot; as Fellow-Sufferers for Conscience; and with the Style of, Our Bretbren the Roman Catholicks. About this Time began the Project of Closetting, (which hath fince been practifed many Times, with more Art and Success) where the principal Gentlemen of the Kingdom were privately catechifed by his Majesty, to know whether, if a new Parliament were called, they would agree to pass an Act for repealing the Sacramental Test, and establishing a general Liberty of Conscience. But he received so little Encouragement, that, despairing of Success, he had Recourse to his dispensing Power, which the Judges had determined to be Part of his Prerogative. By Colour of this Determination, he preferred feveral Presbyterians, and many Papists, to Civil and Military Employments. While the King was thus busied, it is well known that Monsieur Fagel, the Dutch Envoy in London, delivered the Opinion of the Prince and Princess of Orange, concerning the Repeal of the Test; whereof the King had fent an Account to their Highnesses, to know how far they approved of it. The Substance of their Anfwer, as reported by Fagel, was this, That their Highnesses thought very well of a Liberty of Conscience; but by no Means of giving Employments to any other Persons than those who were of the National This Opinion was confirmed by feveral Reasons: I cannot be more particular, not having the Paper by me, although it hath been printed in many Accounts of those Times. And thus much every moderate Churchman would perhaps fubmit to: But to trust any Part of the Civil Power in the Hands of those whose Interest, Inclination, Conscience, and former Practices have been wholly curned to introduce a different System of Religion

and Government, hath very few Examples in any Christian State; nor any at all in Holland, the great

Patroness of Universal Tolleration.

Upon the first Intelligence King James received of an intended Invasion by the Prince of Orange; among great Numbers of Papilts, to increase his Troops, he gave Commissions to several Presbyterians; some of whom had been Officers under the Rump; and particularly he placed one Richards, a noted Presbyterian, at the Head of a Regiment, who had been Governor of Wexford in Cromwell's Time, and is often mentioned by Ludlow in his Memoirs. This Regiment was raised in England against the Prince of Orange: The Colonel made his Son a Captain, whom I knew, and was as zealous a Presbyterian as his Father. However, at the Time of the Prince's Landing, the Father eafily forefeeing how Things would go, went over, like many others, to the Prince, who continued him in his Regiment; but coming over a Year or two after, to affift in raifing the Siege of Derry, he behaved himself so like either a Coward or a Traytor, that his Regiment was taken from him.

I WILL now consider the Conduct of the Church-Party during the whole Reign of that unfortunate King. They were so unanimous against promising to pass an Act for repealing the Test, and establishing a general Liberty of Conscience; that the King durst not trust a Parliament; but encouraged by the Professions of Loyalty given him by his *Presbyterian* Friends, went on with his dispensing Power.

THE Church-Clergy at that Time are allowed to have written the best Collection of Tracts against Popery that ever appeared in England; which are

to this Day in the highest Esteem. But, upon the strictest Enquiry, I could never hear of above one or two Papers published by the Presbyterians at that Time upon the fame Subject. Seven great Prelates (he of Canterbury among the rest) were sent to the Tower, for prefenting a Petition, wherein they defired to be excused in not obeying an illegal Com-The Bishop of London, Dr. mand from the King. Compton, was fummoned to answer before the Commissioners for Ecclesiastical Affairs, for not suspending Dr. Sharp (afterwards Archbishop of York) by the King's Command. If the Presbyterians expreffed the fame Zeal upon any Occasion, the Instances of it are not as I can find, left upon Record, or transmitted by Tradition. The Proceedings against Magdalen College in Oxford, for refusing to comply with the King's Mandate for admitting a professed Papist upon their Foundation, are a standing Proof of the Courage and Firmness in Religion shewn by that learned Society, to the Ruin of their Fortunes. The Presbyterians know very well, that I could produce many more Instances of the same Kind. But these are enough in so short a Paper as I intend at present.

Was fettled on the English Throne, the Presbyterians began to appear, and offer their Credentials, and demand Favour: And, the new King having been originally bred a Calvinist, was desirous enough to make them easy (if that would do it) by a legal Toleration; although in his Heart he never bore much Affection to that Sect; nor designed to favour them further than as it stood with the present Scheme of Politicks: As I have long since been assured by the greatest Men of Whig-Principles at

that Time in England,

IT is likewise true, nor will be denied; that when the King was possessed of the English Crown; and the Remainder of the Quarrel was left to be decided in this Kingdom; the Presbyterians wifely chose to join with the Protestant Army, rather than with that of King James their old Friend, whose Affairs were then in a Manner desperate. were wife enough to know, that this Kingdom, divided against it self, could never prevail against the united Power of England. They fought pro aris & focis; for their Estates and Religion; which latter will never fuffer fo much by the Church of England, as by that of Rome, where they are counted Hereticks as well as we: And confequently they had no other Game to play, But, what Merit they can build upon having joined with a Protestant Army, under a King they acknowledged, to defend their own Liberties and Properties against a Popilb Enemy under an abdicated King; is, I confess, to me absolutely inconceivable; and, I believe, will equally be fo for ever, to any reasonable Man.

WHEN these Sectaries were several Years ago. making the fame Attempt for abolishing the Test, many groundless Reports were industriously and feafonably spread of an Invasion threatned by the Pretender, on the North of Ireland. At which Time the Presbyterians in their Pamphlets argued in a menacing Manner, that if the Pretender should invade those Parts of the Kingdom, where the Numbers and Estates of the Diffenters chiefly lay; they would fit still, and let us fight our own Battles; fince they were to reap no Advantage, which ever Side should be Victors. If this were the Course they intended to take in fuch a Case; I defire to know, how they could contrive safely to stand Neuters, otherwise than by a Compact with the Pretender

Pretender and his Army, to support their Neutrality, and protect them against the Forces of the Crown? This is a necessary Supposition; because they must else have inevitably been a Prey to both. However, by this frank Declaration, they sufficiently shewed their good Will; and confirmed the common Charge laid at their Door; that a Scottish or Northern Presbyterian hates our Episcopal Established Church, more than Popery it self. And, the Reason for this Hatred, is natural enough; because it is the Church alone, that stands in the Way between them, and Power; which Popery doth not.

Upon this Occasion I am in some doubt, whether the political Spreaders of those chimerical Invafions, made a judicious Choice in fixing the Northern Parts of Ireland for that romantick Enterprize. Nor, can I well understand the Wisdom of the Presbyterians in countenancing and confirming those Reports. Because, it seemed to cast a most infamous Reflection upon the Loyalty and religious Principles of their whole Body: For, if there had been any Truth in the Matter, the Confequence must have been allowed, that the Pretender counted. upon more Affistance from his Father's Friends the Presbyterians, by chusing to land in those very Parts. where their Number, Wealth, and Power most prevailed; rather than among those of his own Religion. And therefore, in Charity to this Sect, I rather incline to believe, that those Reports of an Invasion were formed and spread by the Race of small Politicians, in order to do a seasonable Jobb.

As to Popery in general, which for a thousand Years past hath been introducing and multiplying Corruptions both in Doctrine and Discipline; I look upon it to be the most absurd System of Chris-

tianity

tianity professed by any Nation. But I cannot ap: prehend this Kingdom to be in much Danger from The Estates of Papists are very few; crumbling into small Parcels, and daily diminishing. Their common People are funk in Poverty, Ignorance, and Cowardice; and of as little Confequence as Women and Children. Their Nobility and Gentry are at least by one half ruined, banished, or converted: They all foundly feel the Smart of what they fuffered in the last Irish War: Some of them are already retired into foreign Countries; others, as I am told, intend to follow them; and the reft, I believe, to a Man, who still possess any Lands, are absolutely determined never to hazard them again for the Sake of establishing their Superstition. If it hath been thought fit, as some obferve, to abase of the Laws Rigour against Popery in this Kingdom, I am confident it was done for very wife Reasons, considering the Situation of Affairs abroad at different Times, and the Interest of the Protestant Religion in general. And, as I do hot find the least Fault in this Proceeding; so I do not conceive why a funk discarded Party, who neither expect nor defire any Thing more than a quiet Life; should, under the Names of High-flyers, Jacobites, and many other vile Appellations, be charged so often in Print, and at common Tables, with endeavouring to introduce Popery and the Pretender; while the Papists abhor them above all other Men, on Account of Severities against their Priests in her late Majesty's Reign; when the now disbanded Reprobate Party was in Power. This I was convinced of some Years ago by a long Journey into the Southern Parts; where I had the Curiofity to fend for many Priests of the Parishes I passed through; and, to my great Satisfaction found them every

to the late King George; for which they gave me the Reasons abovementioned; at the same Time complaining bitterly of the Hardships they suffered un-

der the QUEEN's last Ministry.

I RETURN from this Digression to the modest Demands of the Presbyterians for a Repeal of the Sacramental Test, as a Reward for their Merits at the Restoration, and the Revolution; which Merits I have fairly represented as well as my Memory would allow me. If I have committed any Mistakes, they must be of little Moment. The Facts and principal Circumstances are what I have obtained and digested, from reading the Histories of those Times, written by each Party; and many Thousands have done the same as well as I, who I am sure have in their Minds drawn the same Conclusions.

This is the Faction, and these the Men who are now refuming their Applications, and giving in their Bills of Merit to both Kingdoms upon two Points, which of all others, they have the least Pretensions to offer. I have collected the Facts with all possible Impartiality, from the current Histories of those Times; and have shewn, although very briefly, the gradual Proceedings of those Sectaries under the Denominations of Puritans, Presbyterians, and Independents, for about the Space of an hundred and eighty Years, from the beginning of Queen Elizabeth, to this present Time. But, notwithstanding all that can be said, these very Schismaticks, (for fuch they are in Temporals as well as Spirituals) are now again expecting, folliciting, and demanding, (not without infinuated Threats, according to their Cuftom) that the Parliament should ax them upon an equal Foot with the Church Establifhed.

I would fain know to what Branch of the Legislature they can have the Forehead to apply. Not to my Lords the Bishops; who must have often read, how the Predecessors of this very Faction, acting upon the fame Principles, drove the whole Bench out of the House; who were then, and hitherto continue one of the three Estates. Not to the Temporal Peers, the fecond of the three Estates; who immediately after those rebellious Fanaticks had murdered their King, voted a House of Lords to be useless and dangerous, and would let them fit no longer, otherwise than when elected as Commoners: Not to the House of Commons; who must have heard, that in those Fanatick Times the Presbyterian and Independent Commanders in the Army, by military Power, expelled all the moderate Men out of the House, and left a Rump to govern the Nation. Laftly, not to the Crown, which those very Saints destined to Rule the Earth, trampled under their Feet, and then in cold Blood murdered the Bleffed Wearer.

But, the Session now approaching, and a Clan of Diffenting Teachers come up to Town from their Northern Head Quarters, accompanied by many of their Elders and Agents, and supported by a general Contribution, to follicit their Establishment, with a Capacity of holding all Military as well as Civil Employments; I think it high Time, that this Paper should see the Light. However, I cannot conclude without freely confessing, that if the Presbyterians should obtain their Ends, I could not be forry to find them mistaken in the Point which they have most at Heart by the Repeal of the Test; I mean the Benefit of Employments. For, after all, what Affurance can a Scottish Northern Diffenter, born on Irish Ground, have, that he shall be treated

treated with as much Favour as a TRUE SCOT

born beyond the Tweed.

I AM ready enough to believe that all I have faid will avail but little. I have the common Excuse of other Men, when I think my self bound by all religious and civil Ties, to discharge my Conscience, and to warn my Countrymen upon this important Occasion. It is true, the Advocates for this Scheme promise a new World, after this blessed Work shall be compleated; that all Animosity and Faction must immediately drop: That, the only Distinction in this Kingdom will then be of Papift and Protestant. For, as to Whig and Tory. High Church and Low Church, Jacobite and Hanoverian, Court and Country Party, English and Irish Interest, Dissenters and Conformists, New Light and Old Light, Anabaptist and Independent, Quaker and Muggletonian; they will all meet and jumble together into a perfect Harmony, at the Sessions and Affizes, on the Bench, and in the Revenues; and upon the Whole, in all Civil and Military Truft, not excepting the great Councils of the Nation. For, it is wifely argued thus: That, a Kingdom being no more than a larger Knot of Friends met together, it is against the Rules of good Manners to shut any Person out of the Company, except the Papists; who profess themselves of another Club.

I AM at a Loss to know what Arts the Presbyterian Sect intends to use, in convincing the World of their Loyalty to kingly Government; which long before the Prevalence, or even the Birth of their Independant Rivals, as soon as the King's Forces were overcome, declared their Principles to be against Monarchy, as well as Episcopacy and the House of Lords, even until the King was restored: At which Event, although they were forced to sub-

Vol. VI. I mit

mit to the present Power, yet I have not heard that they did ever, to this Day, renounce any one Principle by which their Predecessors then acted; yet this they have been challenged to do, or at least to shew that others have done it for them, by a certain * Doctor, who, as I am told, hath much employed his Pen in the like Disputes. I own, they will be ready enough to infinuate themselves into any Government: But, if they mean to be honest and upright, they will and must endeavour by all Means, which they shall think lawful, to introduce and establish their own Scheme of Religion, as nearest approaching to the Word of Gop, by casting out all superstitious Ceremonies, Ecclesiastical Titles, Habits, Distinctions, and Superiorities, as Rags of Popery; in order to a thorough Reformation; and, as in Charity bound, to promote the Salvation of their Countrymen: Wishing with St. Paul, That the whole Kingdom were as they are. But, what Affurance will they please to give, that when their Sect shall become the National Established Worship, they will treat Us DISSENTERS as we have treated them. Was this their Course of Proceeding during the Dominion of the Saints? Were not all the Remainders of the Episcopal Church, in those Days, especially the Clergy, under a Persecution for above a dozen Years, equal to that of the Primitive Christians under Heathen Emperors? That this Proceeding was fuitable to their Principles, is known enough; for many of their Preachers then writ Books expresly against allowing any Liberty of Conscience, in a Religion different from their own; producing many Arguments to prove that Opinion; and among the rest, one frequently infifted on; that, allowing fuch a

^{*} The late Dr. Tisb.s, who died June, 1736.

Liberty would be to establish Iniquity by a Law:

* Many of these Writings are yet to be seen; and, I hear, have been quoted by the Doctor above mentioned.

As to their great Objection of proftituting that holy Institution, the blessed Sacrament, by Way of a Test, before Admittance into any Employment; I ask, whether they would not be content to receive it after their own Manner, for the Office of a Judge. for that of a Commissioner in the Revenue, for a Regiment of Horse, or to be a Lord Justice. I believe they would fcruple it as little, as a long Grace before and after Dinner; which they can fay without bending a Knee. For, as I have been told. their Manner of taking Bread and Wine in their Conventicles, is performed with little more Solemnity than at their common Meals. And, therefore, fince they look upon our Practice in receiving the Elements, to be idolatrous; they neither can, nor ought, in Conscience, to allow us that Liberty, otherwise than by Connivance; and a bare Toleration, like what is permitted to the Papists. But. lest we should offend them, I am ready to change this Test for another; although, I am afraid, that fanctified Reason is, by no Means, the Point where the Difficulty pinches; and only offered by pretended Churchmen, as if they could be content with our believing, that the Impiety and Prophanation of making the Sacrament a Test, were the only Objection. I therefore propose, that before the prefent Law be repealed, another may be enacted; that no Man shall receive any Employment, before he fwears himself to be a true Member of the Church of Ireland, in Doctrine and Discipline, &c. And,

^{*} See many hundred Quotations to prove this, in the Treatife called, Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence.

that he will never frequent, or communicate with any other Form of Worship. It shall likewise be further enacted, that whoever offends, &c. shall be fined five hundred Pounds, imprisoned for a Year and a Day, and rendered incapable of all publick Trust for ever. Otherwise, I do insist, that those pious, indulgent, external Professors of our National Religion, shall either give up that fallacious hypocritical Reason for taking off the Test; or freely confess, that they defire to have a Gate wide open for every Sect, without any Test at all, except that of swearing Loyalty to the King: Which, however, confidering their Principles, with regard to Monarchy yet unrenounced, might, if they would please to look deep enough into their own Hearts, prove a more bitter Test, than any other

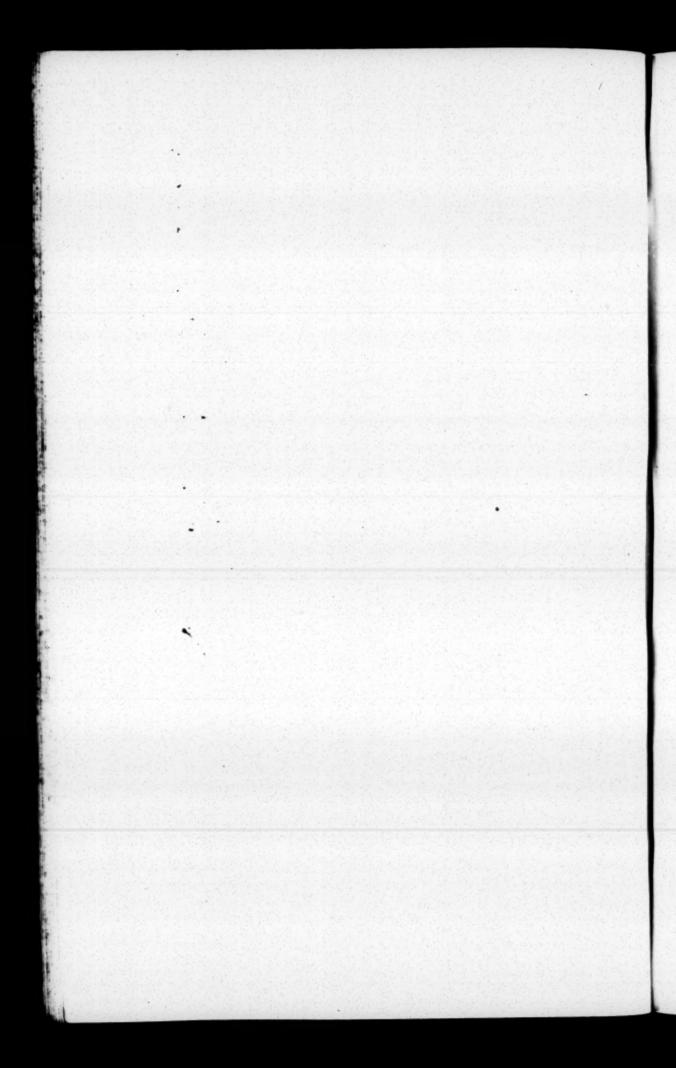
that the Law hath yet invented.

For, from the first Time that these Sectaries appeared in the World, it hath been always found, by their whole Proceeding, that they professed an utter Hatred to kingly Government. I can recollect, at present, three Civil Establishments, where Calvinifts, and some other Reformers who rejected Episcopacy, possess the supreme Power; and, these are all Republicks; I mean, Holland, Geneva, and the reformed Savis Cantons. I do not fay this in Diminution, or Difgrace to Commonwealths; wherein, I confess, I have much altered many Opinions under which I was educated, having been led by fome Observation, long Experience, and a thorough Detestation for the Corruptions of Mankind: Infomuch, that I am now justly liable to the Cenfure of Hobbs, who complains, that the Youth of England imbibe ill Opinions, from reading the Histories of ancient Greece and Rome, those renowned Scenes of Liberty and every Virtue.

But, as to Monarchs; who must be supposed well to study and understand their own Interest; they will best consider, whether those People, who in all their Actions, Preachings, and Writings, have openly declared themselves against Regal Power, are to be safely placed in an equal Degree of Favour and Trust, with those who have been always found the true and only Friends to the English Establishment. From which Consideration, I could have added one more Article to my new

Test, if I had thought it worth my Time.

I HAVE been affured by fome Persons who were present, that several of these Dissenting Teachers, upon their first Arrival hither to follicit the Repeal of the Test, were pleased to express their Gratitude. by publickly drinking the Healths of certain eminent Patrons, whom they pretend to have found among us; if this be true, and that the Test must be delivered up by the very Superiors appointed to defend it; the Affair is already, in Effect, at an End. What fecret Reasons those Patrons may have given for fuch a Return of brotherly Love, I shall not inquire : For, O my Soul come not thou into their Secret, unto their Assembly mine Honour be not thou united. For in their Anger they slew a Man, and in their Self-will they digged down a Wall. Curfed be their Anger, for it was fierce, and their Wrath, for it was cruel; I will divide them in Jacob, and scatter them in Ifrael.



ADVICE

HUMBLY OFFERED TO THE

MEMBERS

OF THE

OCTOBER CLUB.

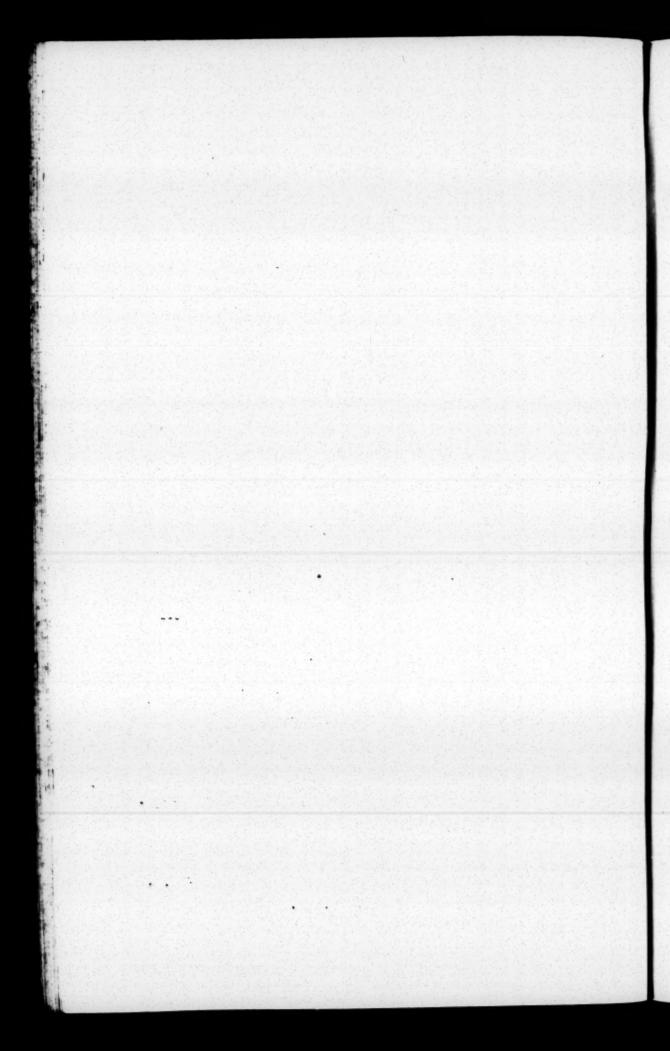
In a LETTER from a Person of Honour.

WRITTEN in the YEAR, 1711.



DUBLIN:

Printed by and for GEORGE FAULKNER MDCCXXXVII.



Publisher's PREFACE.

BOUT the Year when her late Majesty, of Bleffed Memory, thought proper to change ber Ministry, and brought in Mr. Harley, Mr. St. John, Sir Simon Harcourt, and some others: The first of these being made an Earl and Lord Treasurer, he was soon after blamed by his Friends for not making a general Sweep of all the Whigs, as the Latter did of their Adversaries, upon ber Majesty's Death, when they same into Power. At that Time a great Number of Parliament Men amounting to above two bundred, grew so warm upon the Slowness of the Treasurer in this Part, that they formed themselves into a Body under the Name of the October Club, and had many Meetings, to consult upon some Methods that might spur on those in Power, so that they might make a quicker Dispatch, in removing all of the Whig-Leaven from the Employments they still possessed. To prevent the ill Consequences of this Discontent among so many worthy Members; the rest of the Ministry joined with the Treasurer, partly to pacify, and partly to divide those who were in greater Haste than moderate Men thought convenient. It was well known, that the supposed Author met a considerable Number of this Club in a Publick House, where he convinced them very plainly of the Treasurer's Sincerity, with many of those very Reasons which are urged in the following Discourse, besides some others which were not so proper to appear at that Time in Print.

The Treasurer alledged in his Defence, that such a Treasment would not consist with Prudence, because

The PREFACE.

there were many Employments to be bestowed, which required Skill and Practice; that several Gentlemen who possessed them, had been long versed, and very loyal to ber Majesty, and had never been violent Party-Men, and were ready to fall into all bonest Measures for the Service of their Queen and Country. But bowever, as Offices became vacant, be would bumbly recommend to ber Majesty such Gentlemen whose Principles with Regard both to Church and State, his Friends would approve of, and be would be ready to accept their Recommendations. Thus, the Earl proceeded in procuring Employments for those who deserved them by their Honesty, and Abilities to execute them; which, I confess to have been a Singularity not very likely to be imitated. However, the Gentlemen of this Club, still continued uneasy that no quicker Progress was made in Removals, until those who were least violent began to soften a little, or by dividing them, the whole Affair dropped. During this Difficulty, we have been affured, that the following Discourse was very seasonably published with great Success, shewing the Difficulties that the Earl of Oxford lay under, and his real Desire, that all Persons in Employment should be true loyal Churchmen, zealous for her Majesty's Honour and Safety, as well as for the Succession in the House of Hanover, if the Queen should happen to die without Issue. This Difcourse baving been published about the Year 1711, and many of the Facts forgotten, would have not been generally understood without some Explanation, which we bave now endeavoured to give, because it seems a Point of History too material to be lost. We owe this Piece of Intelligence to an Intimate of the Supposed Author.

SOME

ADVICE

HUMBLY OFFERED TO THE

MEMBERS

OF THE

OCTOBER CLUB.

GENTLEMEN,

INCE the first Institution of your Society, I have always thought you capable of the greatest Things. Such a Number of Persons, Members of Parliament, true Lovers of our Constitution in Church and State, meeting at certain Times, and mixing Business and Conversation together, without the Forms and Constraint necessary to be observed in publick Affemblies, must very much improve each others Understanding; correct and fix your Judgment; and prepare your felves against any Designs of the opposite Party. Upon the opening of this Session, an Incident hath happened; to provide against the Consequences whereof will require your utmost Vigilance and Application. All this last Summer the Enemy was working under Ground, and laying their Train; they gradually became more frequent and bold in their Pamphlets and Papers, while those on our Side were dropped, as if we had no farther Occasion for them. Some Time before, an Opportunity fell into their Hands, which they have cultivated ever fince; and thereby have endeavoured, in some Sort, to turn those Arts against us, which had been fo effectually employed to their Ruin: A plain Demonstration of their superior Skill at Intrigue; to make a Stratagem fucceed a fecond Time; and this even against those who first tried it upon them. I know not whether this Opportunity I have mentioned could have been prevented by any Care, without straining a very tender Point, which those chiefly concerned avoided by all Means, because it might seem a Counter Part of what they had so much condemned in their Predeceffors. Although it is certain the two Cases were widely different; and if Policy had once got the better of Good-Nature, all had been fafe, for there was no other Danger in view: But the Confequences of this were foreseen from the Beginning; and those who kept the Watch had early Warning of it. It would have been a Master-Piece of Prudence, in this Case, to have made a Friend of an Enemy. But whether that were possible to be compassed, or whether it were ever attempted, is now too late to enquire. All Accommodation was rendered defperate, by an unlucky Proceeding some Months ago at Windsor, which was a Declaration of War too frank and generous for that Situation of Affairs; and, I am told, was not approved by a certain great Minister. It was obvious to suppose, that in a Particular, where the Honour and Interest of a Husband were so closely united with those of a Wife. he might be fure of her utmost Endeavours for his Protection. Protection, although she neither loved nor esteemed him. The Danger of losing Power, Favour, Profit, and a Shelter from Domestick Tyranny, were strong Incitements to stir up a working Brain, early practised in all the Arts of Intriguing. Neither is it safe to count upon the Weakness of any Man's Understanding, who is thoroughly possessed with the Spirit of Revenge to sharpen his Invention: Nothing else is required besides Obsequiousness and Assiduity; which, as they are often the Talents of those who have no better, so, they are apt to make

Impressions upon the best and greatest Minds.

IT was no small Advantage to the designing Party, that fince the Adventure at Windfor, the Person on whom we so much depend, was long absent by Sickness; which hindered him from pursuing those Measures that Ministers are in Prudence forced to take, to defend their Country and themselves against an irritated Faction. The Negociators on the other Side, improved this favourable Conjuncture to the utmost; and by an unparalelled Boldness, accompanied with many Falshoods, persuaded certain Lords, who were already in the fame Principle, but were afraid of making a wrong Step, left it should lead them out of their Coaches into the Dirt; that voting, in Appearance, against the Court, would be the fafeft Course to avoid the Danger they most apprehended, which was that of lofing their Penfions; and their Opinions, when produced, would, by feemingly contradicting their Interest, have an Appearance of Virtue into the Bargain. This, with fome Arguments of more immediate Power, went far in producing that strange unexpected Turn we have so lately seen, and from which our Adversaries reckoned upon fuch wonderful Effects; and fome

of them, particularly my Lord Chief Justice, began to act as if all were already in their Power.

But, although the more immediate Causes of this Defertion were what I have above related, yet I am apt to think, it would hardly have been attempted, or at least not have succeeded, but for a prevailing Opinion, that the Church Party, and the Ministers, had different Views, or at least were not fo firmly united as they ought to have been, It was commonly faid, and I suppose, not without fome Ground of Truth, that many Gentlemen of your Club were discontented to find so little done; that they thought it looked as if People were not in earnest; that they expected to see a thorough Change, with Respect to Employments; and although every Man could not be provided for, yet when all Places were filled with Persons of good Principles, there would be fewer Complaints, and less Danger from the other Party; that this Change was hoped for all last Summer, and even to the Opening of the Session, yet nothing done. On the other Hand, it was urged by some in Favour of the Ministry, that it was impossible to find Employments for one Pretender in twenty; and therefore, in gratifying one, nineteen would be disobliged: but while all had leave to hope, they would all endeavour to deserve: But this again was esteemed a very shallow Policy, which was too easily seen through, must foon come to an End, and would cause a general Discontent; with twenty other Objections, to which it was liable: And indeed, confidering the short Life of Ministries in our Climate, it was with some Reason thought a little hard, that those for whom any Employment was intended, should, by such a Delay, be probably deprived of half their Benefit; not to mention, that a Ministry

is best confirmed, when all inferior Officers are in its Interest.

I HAVE set this Cause of Complaint in the strongest Light, although my Design is to endeavour that it should have no Manner of Weight with you, as I am consident our Adversaries counted upon, and do still expect to find mighty Advantages by it.

But it is necessary to fay fomething to this Objection, which in all Appearance lieth fo hard upon the present Ministry. What shall I offer upon so tender a Point? How shall I convey an Answer that none will apprehend, except those for whom I intend it? I have often pitied the Condition of great Ministers upon several Accounts; but never fo much upon any, as when their Duty obliges them to bear the Blame and Envy of Actions, for which they will not be answerable in the next World, although they dare not convince the prefent, until it is too late. This Letter is fent you, Gentlemen, from no mean Hand, nor from a Perfon uninformed, although for the rest as little concerned in Point of Interest for any Change of Ministry, as most others of his Fellow-Subjects. therefore assume so much to my felf, as to desire you will depend upon it, that a short Time will make manifest, how little the Defect you complain of, ought to lie at that Door, where your Enemies would be glad to fee you place it. The wifeft Man, who is not very near the Spring of Affairs, but views them only in their Issues and Events, will be apt to fix Applauses and Reproaches in the wrong Place; which is the true Cause of a Weakness that I never yet knew Great Ministers without; I mean their being deaf to all Advice: For, if a Person of the best Understanding, offer his Opinion in a Point where he is not Mafter of all the Circumstan-

ces, (which perhaps are not to be told) it is a hundred to one, that he runs into an Abfurdity: From whence it is, that Ministers falsly conclude themfelves to be equally wifer than others in general Things, where the common Reason of Mankind ought to be the Judge; and is probably less byaffed than theirs. I have known a great Man of excellent Parts, blindly pursue a Point of no Importance, against the Advice of every Friend he had, until it ended in his Ruin. I have feen great Abilities rendered utterly useless, by unaccountable and unnecessary Delay, and by difficulty of Access, by which a thousand Opportunities are suffered to I have observed the strongest Shoulders to escape. fink under too great a Load of Business, for want of dividing a due Proportion among others: These, and more that might be named, are obvious Failings, which every rational Man may be allowed to differn, as well as lament; and wherein the wifeft Minister may receive Advice from others of inferior -Understanding: But, in those Actions where we are not thoroughly informed of all the Motives and Circumstances, it is hardly possible, that our Judgment should not be mistaken. I have often been one of the Company, where we have all blamed a Measure taken, which hath afterward proved the only one that could possibly have succeeded. Nay, I have known those very Men who have formerly been in the Secret of Affairs, when a new Set of People hath come in, offering their Refinements and Conjectures in a very plaufible Manner upon what was passing, and widely err in all they advanced.

WHATEVER Occasions may have been given for Complaints, that enough bath not been done, those Complaints should not be carried so far as to make us forget what bath been done, which at first was a

great

great deal more than we hoped or thought practicable; and you may be affured, that fo much Courage and Address, were not employed in the Beginning of fo great a Work, without a Resolution of carrying it through, as fast as Opportunities would offer. Any of the most fanguine Gentlemen in your Club, would gladly have compounded two Years ago, to have been affured of feeing Affairs in the present Situation: It is principally to the Abilities of one great Person, that you, Gentlemen, owe the Happiness of meeting together, to cultivate good Principles, and form yourselves into a Body for defending your Country against a restless and dange-It is to the Same we all owe that rous Faction. mighty Change in the most important Posts of the Kingdom; that we fee the facred Person of our Prince, encompassed by those whom we ourselves would have chosen, if it had been left to our Power: And, if every Thing befides, that you could wish, hath not been hitherto done, you will be but just to impute it to some powerful, although unknown Impediments, wherein the Ministry is more to be lamented than blamed: But there is good Reason to hope from the vigorous Proceedings of the Court, that these Impediments will in a short Time effectually be removed: And one great Motive to haften. the Removal of them, will doubtless be the Reflection upon those dangerous Consequences which hadlike to have enfued upon not removing them before. Besides, after so plain and formidable a Conviction, that mild and moderate Methods meet with no other Reception or Return, than to ferve as Opportunities to the infatiable Malice of an Enemy; Power will awake to vindicate itself, and disarm its Opposers, at least, of all offensive Weapons. VOL. VI. CONSIDER,

CONSIDER, if you please, how hard beset the prefent Ministry hath been on every Side: By the impossibility of carrying on the War any longer, without taking the most desperate Courses; or of recovering Spain from the House of Bourbon, although we could continue it many Years longer: By the Clamours of a Faction against any Peace without that Condition, which the most knowing among themselves allowed to be impracticable: By the secret Cabals of Foreign Ministers, who have endeavoured to inflame our People, and spirited up a finking Faction to blaft all our Endeavours for Peace, with those popular Reproaches of France and the Pretender: Not to mention the Danger they have been in from private Infinuations of such a Nature, as it was almost impossible to fence against. Clouds now begin to blow over, and those who are at the Helm, will have Leifure to look about them; and compleat what yet remains to be done.

THAT Confederate Body which now makes up the Adverse Party, consisteth of an Union so monstrous and unnatural, that in a little Time it must of Necessity fall to Pieces. The Diffenters with Reafon think themselves betrayed and fold by their Bre-What they have been told, that the prefent Bill against Occasional Conformity, was to prevent a greater Evil, is an Excuse too gross to pass; and if any other profound Refinement were meant, it is now come to nothing. The remaining Sections of the Party, have no other Tye but that of an inveterate Hatred and Rancour against those in Power, without agreeing in any other common Interest; not cemented by Principle or Personal Friendship; I speak par icularly of their Leaders; and although, I know that Court-Enmities are as incon frant as its Friendships, yet from the Difference of Temper and Principle Principle, as well as the Scars remaining of former Animolities, I am persuaded their League will not be of long Continuance: I know several of them who will never pardon those with whom they are now in Confederacy; and when once they see the present Ministry thoroughly fixed, they will grow weary of Hunting upon a cold Scent, or playing a

desperate Game; and crumble away.

On the other Side, while the Malice of that Party continues in Vigour; while they yet feel the Bruises of their Fall, which pain them afresh since their late Disappointment; they will leave no Arts untried to recover themselves; and it behaves all who have any Regard for the Safety of the QUEEN or her Kingdom, to join unanimously against an Adversary who will return full fraught with Vengeance upon the first Opportunity that shall offer: And this, perhaps, is more to be regarded, because that Party feem yet to have a Referve of Hope, in the same Quarter from whence their last Reinforcement came. Neither can any Thing cultivate this Hope of theirs fo much, as a Disagreement among ourselves, founded upon a Jealousy of the Ministry, who, I think, need no better a Testimony of their good Intentions, than the inceffant Rage of the Party-Leaders against them.

THERE is one Fault which both Sides are apt to charge upon themselves, and very generously commend their Adversaries for the contrary Virtue. The Tories acknowledge, that the Whigs outdid them in rewarding their Friends, and adhering to each other. The Whigs allow the same to the Tories. I am apt to think, that the former may a little excel the latter in this Point; for doubtless, the Tories are less vindicative of the two; and whoever is remiss in Punishing, will probably be so in Reward-

K 2

ing; although at the same Time I well remember the Clamours often raised during the Reign of that Party against the Leaders, by those who thought their Merits were not rewarded; and they had Reason on their Side; because it is, no doubt, a Misfortune, to forfeit Honour and Conscience for nothing: But surely, the Case is very different at this Time, when whoever adheres to the Administration, doeth Service to God, his Prince, and his Country, as well as contributes to his own private Interest and Sasety.

But, if the Whig Leaders were more grateful in rewarding their Friends, it must be avowed likewise, that the Bulk of them was in general more zealous for the Service of their Party, even when abstracted from any private Advantage; as might be observed in a thousand Instances; for which I would likewise commend them, if it were not natural to Mankind to be more violent in an ill Cause,

than a good one.

THE perpetual Discord of Factions, with several Changes of late Years in the very Nature of our Government, have controuled many Maxims a-The Court and Country Party which mong us. used to be the old Division, seems now to be ceased. or suspended for better Times and worse Princes The QUEEN and Ministry are at this Time fully in the true Interest of the Kingdom; and therefore the Court and Country are of a Side; and the Whigs, who originally were of the latter, are now of neither, but an independant Faction, nursed up by the Necessities or Mistakes of a late good, although unexperienced Prince. Court and Country ought therefore to join their Forces against these common Enemies, until they are entirely dispersed and disabled. It is enough to arm ourselves against them, when we confider

consider that the greatest Missortunes which can befal the Nation, are what would most answer their
Interest and their Wishes; a perpetual War increases
their Money, breaks and beggars their Landed Enemies. The Ruin of the Church would please the
Differences, Deists, and Socinians, whereof the Body
of their Party consists. A Commonwealth, or a
Protestor, would gratify the Republican Principles
of some, and the Ambition of others among them.

I would infer from hence, that no Discontents of an inferior Nature, such I mean, as I have already mentioned, should be carried so far as to give any ill Impression of the present Ministry. If all Things have not been hitherto done as you, Gentlemen, could reasonably wish, it can be imputed only to the secret Instruments of that Faction. The Truth of this hath appeared from some late Incidents more visible than formerly. Neither do I believe, that any one will now make a Doubt whether a certain Person be in carnest, after the united and avowed Endeavours of a whole Party to strike directly at his Head.

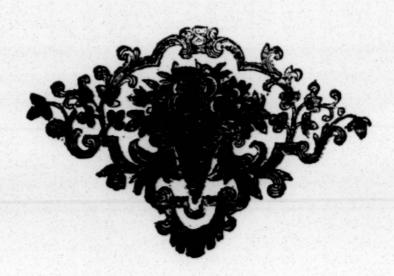
When it happens, by some private cross Intrigues, that a great Man hath not the Power which is thought due to his Station, he will however probably desire the Reputation of it, without which he neither can preserve the Dignity, nor hardly go through the common Business of his Place; yet is it that Reputation to which he owes all the Envy and Hatred of others, as well as his own Disquiets. Mean Time, his expecting Friends impute all their Disappointments to some deep Design, or to his Desect of Good-will; and his Enemies are sure to cry up his Excess of Power; especially in those Points where they are consident it is most shortned.

A Minister, in this difficult Case, is sometimes forced to preferve his Credit, by forbearing what is in his Power, for fear of discovering how far the Limits extend of what is not; or perhaps for fear of shewing an Inclination contrary to that of his Ma-Yet all this while he lies under the Reproach of Delay, Unsteddiness, or Want of Sincerity. that there are many Inconveniencies and Dangers, either in discovering, or concealing the Want of Neither is it hard to conceive, that Ministers may happen to suffer for the Sins of their Predecessors, who by their great Abuses and Monopolies of Power and Favour, have taught Princes to be more thrifty for the Future in the Distribution of both. And, as in common Life, whoever hath been long confined, is very fond of his Liberty, and will not eafily endure the very Appearance of Restraint, even from those who have been the Instruments of fetting him free; fo it is with the Recovery of Power; which is usually attended with an undistinguished Jealousy, lest it should be again invaded. In fuch a Juncture, I cannot discover why a wife and honest Man should venture to place himfelf at the Head of Affairs upon any other Regard than the Safety of his Country, and the Advice of Socrates, to prevent an ill Man from coming in.

Upon the whole, I do not see any one ground of Suspicion or Dislike, which you, Gentlemen, or others, who wish well to their Country, may have entertained about Persons or Proceedings, but what may probably be misapprehended even by those who think they have the best Information. Nay, I will venture to go one Step farther, by adding, that although it may not be prudent to speak out upon this Occasion; yet, whoever will reason impartial-

ly upon the whole State of Affairs, must entirely acquit the Ministry of that Delay and Neutrality which have been laid to their Charge. Or suppose, fome small Part of this Accusation were true, (which I positively know to be otherwise, whereof the World will foon be convinced) yet the Confequences of any Refentment at this Time, must either be none at all, or the most fatal that can be imagined: For if the prefent Ministry be made so uneasy, that a Change be thought necessary, Things will return of Course into the old Hands of those whose Little-Fingers will be found heavier than their Predecessors Loins. The Whig-Faction is fo dextrous at Corrupting, and the People fo susceptible of it, that you cannot be ignorant how easy it will be, after such a Turn of Affairs, upon a new Election, to procure a Majority against you. They will refume their Power, with a Spirit like that of Marius or Sylla, or the last Triumvirate; and those Ministers who have been most censured for too much Hesitation, will fall the first Sacrifices to their Vengeance. But, these are the smallest Mischies to be apprehended from fuch returning Exiles. Security can a Prince hope for his Person or his Crown, or even for the Monarchy itself? He must expect to fee his best Friends brought to the Scaffold, for afferting his Rights; to fee his Prerogative trampled on, and his Treasure applied to feed the Avarice of those who make themselves his Keepers: To hear himself treated with Insolence and Contempt; to have his Family purged at Pleasure by their Humour and Malice; and to retain even the Name and Shadow of a King, no longer than his Ephori shall think fit,

THESE are the inevitable Consequences of such a Change of Affairs, as that envenomed Party is now projecting; which will best be prevented by your firmly adhering to the present Ministry, until this Domestick Enemy is out of all possibility of making Head any more.



CONSIDERATIONS

CONSIDERATIONS

UPON TWO

BILLS

Sent down from the Right Honourable the

House of LORDS

To the Honourable

House of COMMONS

Relating to the

CLERGY

OF

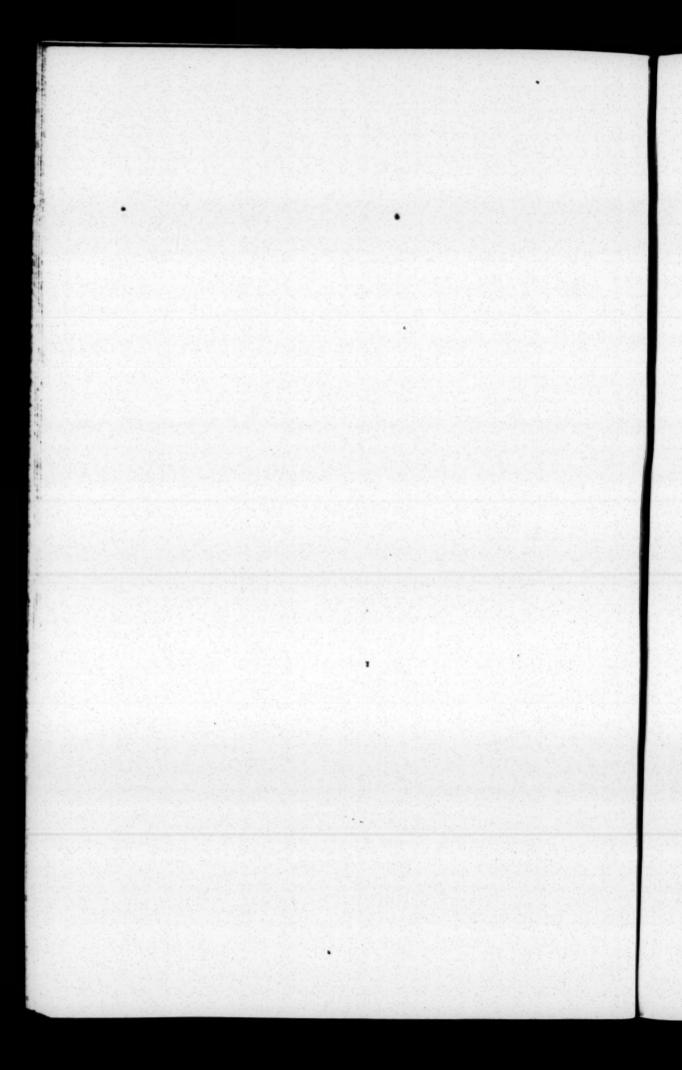
IRELAND.

WRITTEN in the YEAR, 1731.



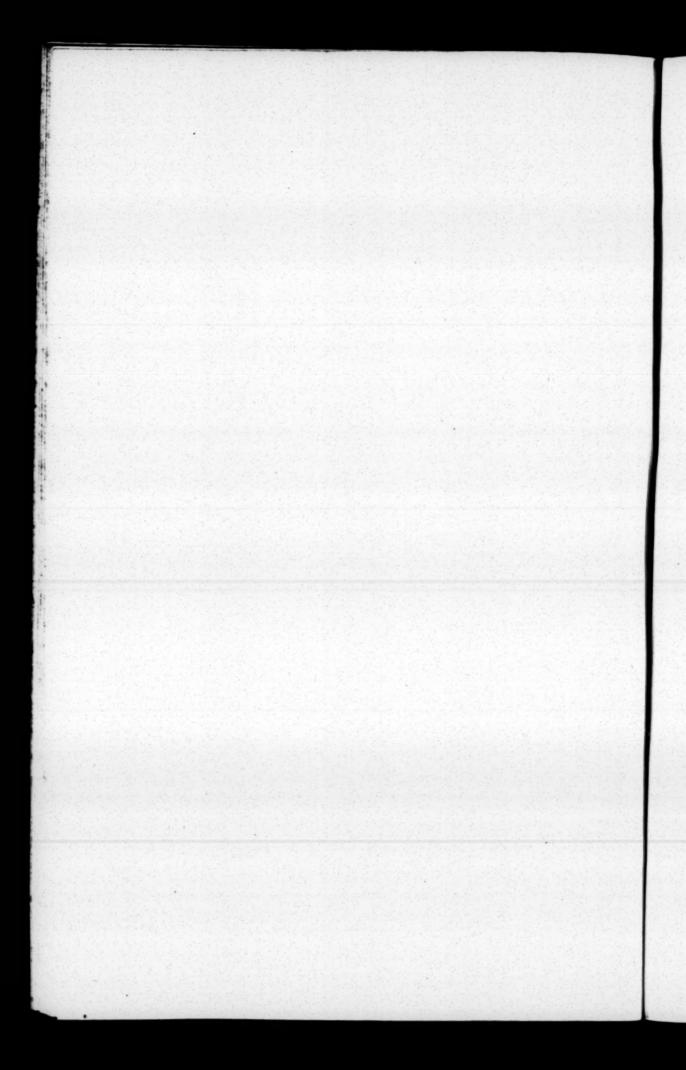
Printed by and for GEORGE FAULENER.

MDCCXXXVII.



ADVERTISEMENT.

N the Year 1731, a Bill was brought into the House of Lords by a great Majority of the Right Reverend the Bishops, for enabling them to divide the Livings of the inferior Cler-gy; which Bill was approved of in the Privy-Council of Ireland, and passed by the Lords in Parliament. It was afterwards sent to the House of Commons for their Apprehation; but was rejected by them with a great Majority. The supposed Author of the following Considerations, who hath always been the best Friend to the inferior Clergy of the Church of England, as may be Jeen by many Parts of his Writings, opposed this pernicious Project with great Success; which, if it had passed into Law would have been of the worst Consequence to this Nation.



CONSIDERATIONS

UPON TWO

BILLS, &c.

HAVE often, for above a Month past, defired fome few Clergymen, who are pleafed to visit me, that they would procure an Extract of two Bills, brought into the Council by fome of the Bishops, and both of them since passed in the House of Lords: But I could never obtain what I defired, whether by the Forgetfulness, or Negligence of those whom I employed, or the Difficulty of the Thing itself. Therefore, if I shall happen to miltake in any Fact of Consequence, I defire my Remarks upon it, may pass for Nothing; for my Information is no better than what I received in Words from feveral Divines, who feemed to agree with each other. I have not the Hononr to be acquainted with any one fingle Prelate of the Kingdom; and am a Stranger to their Characters, further than as common Fame reports them, which is not to be depended on. Therefore, I cannot be supposed to act upon any Principle of Refentment. I efteem their Functions (if I may

be allowed to fay so without Offence) as truly Apofolical, and absolutely necessary to the Perfection

of a Christian Church.

THERE are no Qualities more incident to the Frailty and Corruptions of human Kind, than an Indifference, or Infentibility for other Mens Sufferings, and a fudden Forgetfulness of their own former humble State, when they rife in the World. These two Dispositions have not, I think, any where fo ftrongly exerted themselves, as in the Order of Bishops, with regard to the inferior Clergy; for which I can find no Reasons, but such as naturally should seem to operate a quite contrary Way. The Maintenance of the Clergy, throughout the Kingdom, is precarious and uncertain, collected from a most miserable Race of beggarly Farmers; at whose Mercy every Minister lies to be defrauded: His Office, as Rector, or Vicar, if it be duly executed, is very laborious: As foon as he is promoted to a Bishoprick, the Scene is entirely and happily changed; his Revenues are large, and as furely paid as those of the King; his whole Business is once a Year to receive the Attendance, the Submiffion, and the Proxy-Money of all his Clergy, in whatever Part of the Diocese he shall please to think most convenient for himself. Neither is his personal Presence necessary, for the Business may be done by a Vicar-General. The Fatigue of Ordination, is just what the Bishops please to make it, and as Matters have been for fome Time, and may probably remain, the fewer Ordinations the better. The rest of their visible Office, consists in the Honour of attending Parliaments and Councils, and bestowing Preferments in their own Gift; in which last Employment, and in their Spiritual and Temporal Courts, the Labour falls to their Vicars-Genetal.

nions

ral, Secretaries, Proctors, Apparitors, Seneschals, and the like. Now, I fay, in fo quick a Change, where their Brethren, in a few Days, are become their Subjects, it would be reasonable at least, to hope, that the Labour, Confinement, and Subjection from which they have fo lately escaped, like a Bird out of the Snare of the Fowler, might a little incline them to remember the Condition of those. who were but last Week their Equals, probably their Companions or their Friends, and possibly as reasonable Expectants. There is a known Story of Colonel Tidcomb, who, while he continued a Subaltern Officer, was every Day complaining against the Pride, Oppression, and hard Treatment of Colonels towards their Officers; yet in a very few Minutes after he had received his Commission for a Regiment, walking with a Friend on the Mall, he confessed that the Spirit of Colonelship, was coming fast upon him, which Spirit is said to have daily increased to the Hour of his Death.

It is true, the Clergy of this Kingdom, who are promoted to Bishopricks, have always some great Advantages; either that of rich Deanaries, opulent and multiplied Restories and Dignities, strong Alliances by Birth or Marriage, fortified by a superlative Degree of Zeal and Loyalty; but, however, they were all at first no more than young Beginners; and before their great Promotion, were known by their plain Christian Names, among their old Companions, the middling Rate of Clergymen; nor could, therefore, be Strangers to their Condition, or with any good Grace, forget it so

foon, as it hath, too often happened.

I CONFESS, I do not remember to have observed any Body of Men, acting with so little Concert as our Clergy have done, in a Point where their Opinions appeared to be Unanimous: A Point wherein their whole Temporal Support was concerned,
as well as their Power of ferving God and his
Church, in their Spiritual Functions. This hath
been imputed to their Fear of disobliging, or hopes
of further Favours upon Compliance; because it
was observed, that some who appeared at first with
greatest Zeal, thought fit suddenly to absent themselves from the usual Meetings; yet, we know
what expert Sollicitors the Quakers, the Dissenters,
and even the Papists have sometimes sound, to
drive a Point of Advantage, or prevent an impending Evil.

I HAVE not seen any Extract from the two Bills introduced into the Privy Council by the Bishops; where the Clergy, upon some Failure in Favour, or through the Timorousness of many among their Brethren, were refused to be heard by the Council. It seems, these Bills were both returned, agreed to by the King and Council in England; and the House of Lords hath, with great Expedition, past them both; and it is said they are immediately to be sent down to the Commons for their Consent.

THE Particulars, as they have been imperfectly reported to me, are as follow.

By one of the Bills, the Bishops have Power to oblige the Country Clergy, to build a Mansion-House upon whatever Part of their Glebes their Lordships shall Command; and if the Living be above 50 l. a Year, the Minister is bound to build, after three Years, a House that shall cost one Year and an half's Rent of his Income. For Instance, if a Clergyman, with a Wise and seven Children, gets a Living of 55 l. per Annum, he must after three

three Years, build a House that shall cost 77 l. 10 s. And must support his Family during the Time the Bishop shall appoint for the Building of it with the Remainder. But, if the Living be under 50 l. a Year, the Minister shall be allowed 100 l. out of the first Fruits.

But, there is said to be one Circumstance a little Extraordinary; that if there be a single Spot in the Glebe more Barren, more Marshy, more exposed to Winds, more distant from the Church, or Skeleton of a Church, or from any Conveniency of Building: The Rector, or Vicar may be obliged by the Caprice, or Pique of the Bishop, to build, under pain of Sequestration (an Office, which ever falls into the most knavish Hands) upon whatever Point his Lordship shall command; although the Farmers have not paid one Quarter of his Dues.

I BELIEVE, under the present Distresses of the Kingdom (which inevitably, without a Miracle, must increase for ever) there are not ten Country Clergymen in *Ireland*, reputed to posses a Parish of 1001. per Annum, who, for some Years past, have actually received 601. and that with the utmost Dissiculty and Vexation. I am, therefore, at a Loss, what Kind of Valuators the Bishops will make use of; and whether the starving Vicar, shall be forced to build his House with the Money he never received.

THE other Bill, which passed in two Days after the former, is said to concern the Division of Parishes, into as many Parcels as the Bishop shall think sit, only leaving 300 l. a Year to the Mother Church; which 300 l. by another Ast passed some Years ago, they can divide likewise, and crumble as low as their Will and Pleasure will dispose them. So, that instead of six hundred Clergymen, which,

Vol. VI. L

I think, is the usual Computation, we may have in a small Compass of Years almost as many Thousands to live with Decency and Comfort, provide for their Children, be charitable to the Poor, and

maintain Hospitality.

But it is very reasonable to hope, and heartily to be wished by all those who have the least Regard to our Holy Religion, as hitherto established, or to a learned, pious, diligent, converfable Clergyman, or even to common Humanity; that the Honouratle House of Commons will, in their great Wisdom, Justice, and Tenderness to innocent Wen, consider these Bills in another Light. It is said, they well knew this Kingdom not to be fo over-stocked with neighbouring Gentry; but a difcreet, learned Clergyman, with a Competency fit for one of his Education, may be an entertaining, a ufeful, and fometimes a necessary Companion. That, although fuch a Clergyman may not be able constantly to find BEEF and WINE for his own Family, yet he may be allowed fometimes to afford both to a Neighbour, without diffresting himself; and the rather, because he may expect at least as good a Return. It will probably be confidered, that in many defolate Parts, there may not be always a fufficient Number of Persons considerable enough to be trusted with Commissions of the Peace, which feveral of the Clergy now supply much better than a little, hedge, contemptible, illiterate Vicar from twenty to fifty Pounds a Year, the Son of a Weaver, Pedlar, Taylor, or Miller, can be prefumed to do.

THE Landlords and Farmers by this Scheme can find no Profit, but will certainly be Losers; for Instance, if the large Northern Livings be split into a dozen Parishes, or more, it will be very necessary

tor

for the little threadbare Gownman, with his Wife, his Proctor, and every Child who can crawl, to watch the Fields at Harvest Time, for fear of lofing a fingle Sheaf, which he could not afford under Peril of a Day's Starving; for according to the Scotch Proverb, a hungry Louse bites fore. This would of Necessity, breed an infinite Number of Brangles and litigious Suits in the Spiritual Courts; and put the wretched Pastor at perpetual Variance with his whole Parish. But, as they have hitherto stood, a Clergyman established in a competent Living is not under the Necessity of being so tharp, vigilant, and exacting. On the contrary, it is well known and allowed, that the Clergy round the Kingdom think themselves well treated, if they lose only one fingle Third of their legal Demands.

THE Honourable House may, perhaps, be inclined to conceive, that my Lords the Bishops, enjoy as ample a Power both Spiritual and Temporal, as will fully fuffice to answer every Branch of their Office; That, they want no Laws to regulate the Conduct of those Clergymen, over whom they preside; That, if Non-Residence be a Grievance, it is the Patron's Fault, who makes not a better Choice, or caused the Plurality. That, if the general impartial Character of Persons chosen into the Church had been more regarded, and the Motive of Party, Alliance, Kindred, Flatterers, Ill-Judgment, or Personal Favour regarded less; there would be fewer Complaints of Non-Refidence, want of Care, blameable Behaviour, or any other Part of Misconduct; not to mention Ignorance and Supidity.

I COULD name certain Gentlemen of the Gown, whose aukward, spruce, prim, sneering, and smirking Countenances, the very Tone of their Voice,

and an ungainly Strut in their Walk, without one fingle Talent for any one Office, have contrived to get good Preferment by the meer Force of Flattery and Cringing: For which two Virtues (the only two Virtues they pretend to) they were, however, utterly unqualified. And whom, if I were in Power, although they were my Nephews or had married my Nieces, I could never in Point of good Conscience or Honour, have recommended to a

Curacy in Connaught.

THE Honourable House of Commons may likewise perhaps confider, that the Gentry of this Kingdom differ from all others upon Earth, being less capable of Employments in their own Country, than any others who come from Abroad; and, that most of them have little Expectation of providing for their younger Children, otherwife than by the Church, in which there might be some Hopes of getting a tolerable Maintenance. For, after the Patrons should have settled their Sons, their Nephews, their Nieces, their Dependents, and their Followers, invited over from the other Side, there would still remain an Overplus of smaller Church Preferments, to be given to fuch Clergy of the Nation, who shall have their quantum of whatever Merit may be then in Fashion. But by these Bills, they will be all as absolutely excluded, as if they had passed under the Denomination of Tories; unless they can be contented at the utmost with 50 %. a Year; which, by the Difficulties of collecting Tythes in Ireland, and the daily increasing Miseries of the People, will hardly rife to half that Sum.

It is observed, that the Divines sent over hither to govern this Church, have not seemed to consider the Difference between both Kingdoms, with Respect to the inferior Clergy. As to themselves,

indeed,

indeed, they find a large Revenue in Lands let at one quarter Value, which confequently must be paid while there is a Penny lest among us; and, the Publick Distress so little affects their Interests, that their Fines are now higher than ever: They content themselves to suppose, that whatever a Parish is said to be worth, comes all into the Parson's Pocket.

THE Poverty of great Numbers among the Clergy in England, hath been the continual Complaint of all Men who wish well to the Church; and many Schemes have been thought on to redrefs it; yet an English Vicar of 401. a Year, lives much more comfortably than one of double the Value in Ireland. His Farmers, generally speaking, are able and willing to pay him his full Dues: He hath a decent Church of antient Standing, filled every Lord's Day with a large Congregation of plain People, well clad, and behaving themselves as if they believed in God and Christ. He hath a House and Barn in repair, a Field or two to graze his Cows, with a Garden and Orchard. No Guest expects more from him than a Pot of Ale; he lives like an honest plain Farmer, as his Wife is dressed but little better than Goody. He is fometimes graciously invited by the Squire, where he fits at humble Diftance; if he gets the Love of his People, they often make him little useful Presents: He is happy by being born to no higher Expediation; for he is usually the Son of some ordinary Tradesman, or middling Farmer. His Learning is much of a Size with his Birth and Education; no more of either than what a poor hungry Servitor can be expected to bring with him from his College. It would be tedious to shew the Reverse of all this in our diftant poorer Parishes, through most Parts of Ircland, Ireland, wherein every Reader may make the Com-

parison.

LASTLY, The Honourable House of Commons may consider, whether the Scheme of multiplying beggarly Clergymen, through the whole Kingdom, who must all have Votes for chusing Parliament Men (provided they can prove their Freeholds to be worth 40 s. per Annum, ultra reprisas) may not, by their Numbers, have great Influence upon Elections; being entirely under the Dependance of their Bishops. For, by a moderate Computation, after all the Divisions and Sub-divisions of Parishes, that, my Lords, the Bishops, have Power to make by their new Laws, there will, as soon as the present Set of Clergy goes off, be raised an Army of Ecclesiastical Militants, able enough for any Kind of Service, except that of the Altar.

I AM, indeed, in some Concern about a Fund for building a thousand or two Churches, wherein these Probationers may read their Wall-Lectures; and begin to doubt they must be contented with Barns; which Barns will be one great advancing Step towards an Accommodation with our true

Protestant Brethren, the Diffenters.

The Scheme of encouraging Clergymen to build Houses by dividing a Living of 500 l. a Year into ten Parts, is a Contrivance, the Meaning where-of hath got on the wrong Side of my Comprehension; unless it may be argued, that Bistops build no Houses, because they are so rich; and therefore, the inferior Clergy will certainly build, if you reduce them to Beggary. But I knew a very rich Man of Quality in England, who could never be persuaded to keep a Servant out of Livery; because such Servants would be expensive, and apt in Time, to look like Gentlemen; whereas, the others were ready

ready to submit to the basest Offices, and at a cheaper Pennyworth might increase his Retinue.

I HEAR, it is the Opinion of many wife Men, that before these Bills should pass both Houses, they might be sent back to England with the fol-

lowing Claufes inferted.

Dozen double Bishopricks in Ireland, those Bishop-ricks should be split and given to different Persons; and those of a single Denomination be also divided into two, three, or four Parts as Occasion shall require; otherwise there may be a Question started, whether twenty two Prelates can effectually extend their paternal Care, and unlimited Power, for the Protection and Correction of so great a Number of Spiritual Subjects. But, this Proposal will meet with such furious Objections, that I shall not insist upon it; for I well remember to have read, what a terrible Fright the Frogs were in, upon a Report, that the Sun was going to marry.

ANOTHER Clause should be, that none of these twenty, thirty, forty, or fifty Pounders may be suffered to marry, under the Penalty of immediate Deprivation; their Marriages declared null, and their Children Bastards: For, some desponding People take the Kingdom to be not in a Condition of en-

couraging fo numerous a Breed of Beggars.

A THIRD Clause will be necessary, that these humble Gentry should be absolutely disqualified from giving Votes in Elections for Parliament Men.

OTHERS add a Fourth; which is a Clause of Includence, that these reduced Divines may be permitted to follow any lawful Ways of living, which will not call them too often or too far from their Spiritual Offices: (For, unless I misapprehend, Vol. VI.

they are supposed to have Episcopal Ordination.) For Example; they may be Lappers of Linnen, Bayliffs of the Mannor; they may let Blood, or apply Plaisters for three Miles round: They may get a Dispensation to hold the Clerkship and Sextonship of their own Parish in Commendam. Wives and Daughters may make Shirts for the Neighbourhood; or, if a Barrack be near, for the Soldiers: In Linnen Countries, they may Card and Spin, and keep a few Looms in the House: They may let Lodgings, and fell a Pot of Ale without Doors, but not at Home, unless to sober Company, and at regular Hours. It is by some thought a little hard, that in an Affair of the last Confequence, to the very Being of the Clergy, in the Points of Liberty and Property, as well as in their Abilities to perform their Duty; this whole Reverend Body, who are the established Instructors of the Nation in Christianity and Moral Virtues, and are the only Persons concerned; should be the fole Persons not consulted. Let any Scholar shew the like Precedent in Christendom for twelve hundred Years past. An Act of Parliament for fettling or felling an Estate in a private Family, is never passed until all Parties give Consent. But in the present Case the whole Body of the Clergy is, as themselves apprehend, determined to utter Ruin, without once expecting or asking their Opinion; and this by a Scheme contrived only by one Part of the Convocation, while the other Part which hath been chosen in the usual Forms, wants only the regal Permission to assemble, and consult about the Affairs of the Church, as their Predeceffors have always done in former Ages; where it is presumed, the Lower House hath a Power of propoling Canons, and a negative Voice, as well as the Upper.

Upper. And, God forbid (fay these Objectors) that there should be a real separate Interest between the Bishops and Clergy, any more than there is between a Man and his Wise, a King and his Peo-

ple, or Christ and his Church.

It feems there is a Provision in the Bill, that no Parish shall be cut into Scraps, without the Confent of several Persons who can be no Sufferers in the Matter; but I cannot find that the Clergy lay much Weight on this Caution; because they argue, that the very Persons from whom these Bills took its Rise, will have the greatest Share in the Decision.

I Do not, by any Means, conceive the crying Sin of the Clergy in this Kingdom, to be that of Non-Residence; I am sure, it is many Degrees less fo here than in England; unless the Possession of Pluralities may pass under that Name; and if this be a Fault, it is well known to whom it must be imputed: I believe, upon a fair Inquiry (and I hear an Inquiry is to be made) they will appear to be most pardonably Few; especially, considering how many Parishes have not an Inch of Glibe; and how difficult it is upon any reasonable Terms, to find a Place of Habitation. And, therefore, God knows, whether, my Lords the Bishops will be foon able to convince the Clergy, or those who have any Regard for that venerable Body, that the chief Motive in their Lordships Minds, by procuring these Bills, was to prevent the Sin of Non-Residence, while the universal Opinion of almost every Clergyman in the Kingdom, without Distinction of Party, taking in even those who are not likely to be Sufferers, stands directly against them.

If fome Livings in the North may be justly thought too large a Compass of Land, which

makes

makes it inconvenient for the remotest Inhabitants to attend the Service of the Church, which in some Instances may be true; no reasonable Clergyman would oppose a proper Remedy by particular Acts of Parliament.

Thus for Instance, the Deanery of Down, a Country Deanery, I think, without a Cathedral, depending wholly upon an Union of Parishes joined together, in a Time when the Land lay waste and thinly inhabited; since those Circumstances are so prodigiously changed for the Better, may properly be lessened, leaving a decent Competency to the Dean, and placing Restories in the remaining Churches, which are now served only by stipendary Curates.

THE Case may be probably the same in other Parts: And such a Proceeding discreetly managed

would be truly for the Good of the Church.

For, it is to be observed, that Dean and Chapter Lands, which in England were all seized under the Fanatick Usurpation, are Things unknown in Ireland, having been long ravished from the Church, by a Succession of Consusions; and Tythes applied in their Stead, to support that Ecclesiastical Dig-

nity.

THE late* Arch-Bishop of Dublin had a very different Way of encouraging the Clergy of his Diocese to Residence: When a Lease had ran out seven Years or more, he stipulated with the Tenant to resign up twenty or thirty Acres to the Minister of the Parish where it lay convenient, without lessening his former Rent; and with no great Abatement of the Fine; and this he did in the Parts near Dublin, where Land is at the highest Rates, leaving

^{*} The Right Reverend Dr. WILLIAM KING.

a small Chiefry for the Minister to pay, hardly a sixth Part of the Value. I doubt not, that almost every Bishop in the Kingdom may do the same generous Act with less Damage to their Sees, than his late Grace of Dublin; much of whose Lands were out in Fee Farms, or Leases for Lives; and I am sorry that the good Example of such a Prelate hath not been followed.

But a great Majority of the Clergy's Friends cannot hitherto reconcile themselves to this Project; which they call a levelling Principle, that must inevitably root out the Seeds of all honest Emulation, the legal Parent of the greatest Virtues, and most generous Actions among Men; but in the general Opinion (for I do not pretend to offer my own) will never more have room to exert it self in the Breast of any Clergyman whom this Kingdom

shall produce.

But, whether the Consequences of these Bills may, by the Virtues and Frailties of suture Bishops, sent over hither to rule the Church, terminate in Good and Evil, I shall not presume to determine, since God can work the Former out of the Latter. However, one Thing I can venture to assert; that from the earliest Ages of Christianity to the Minute I am now Writing, there never was a Precedent of such a Proceeding, much less to be teared, hoped, or apprehended from such Hands in any Christian Country; and so it may pass for more than a Phanix; because it hath risen without any Assistance from the Asses of its Sire.

THE Appearance of fo many Diffenters at the Hearing of this Cause, is what, I am told, hath not been charged to the Account of their Prudence or Moderation; because that Action hath been censured as a Mark of Triumph and Insult before the

Victory

Victory is compleat; fince neither of these Bills hath yet passed. House of Commons, and some are pleased to think it not impossible that they may be rejected. Neither do I hear, that there is an enacting Clause in either of the Bills to apply any Part of the divided or sub-divided Tythes, towards encreasing the Stipends of the Sectaries. So, that these Gentlemen seem to be gratisfied like him, who, after having been kicked down Stairs, took Comfort when he saw his Friend kicked down after him.

I HAVE heard many more Objections against feveral Particulars of both these Bills; but they are of so high a Nature, and carry such dreadful Innuendoes, that I dare not mention them, resolving to give no Offence, because I well know how obnoxious I have long been (although I conceive without any Fault of my own) to the Zeal and Principles of those, who place all Difference in Opinion, concerning publick Matters, to the Score of Disaffection; whereof I am at least as innocent as the loudest of my Detractors.

Dublin, February 24, 1731-2.

PROPOSAL

FOR GIVING

BADGES

TO THE

BEGGARS

IN ALL THE

Parishes of DUBLIN.

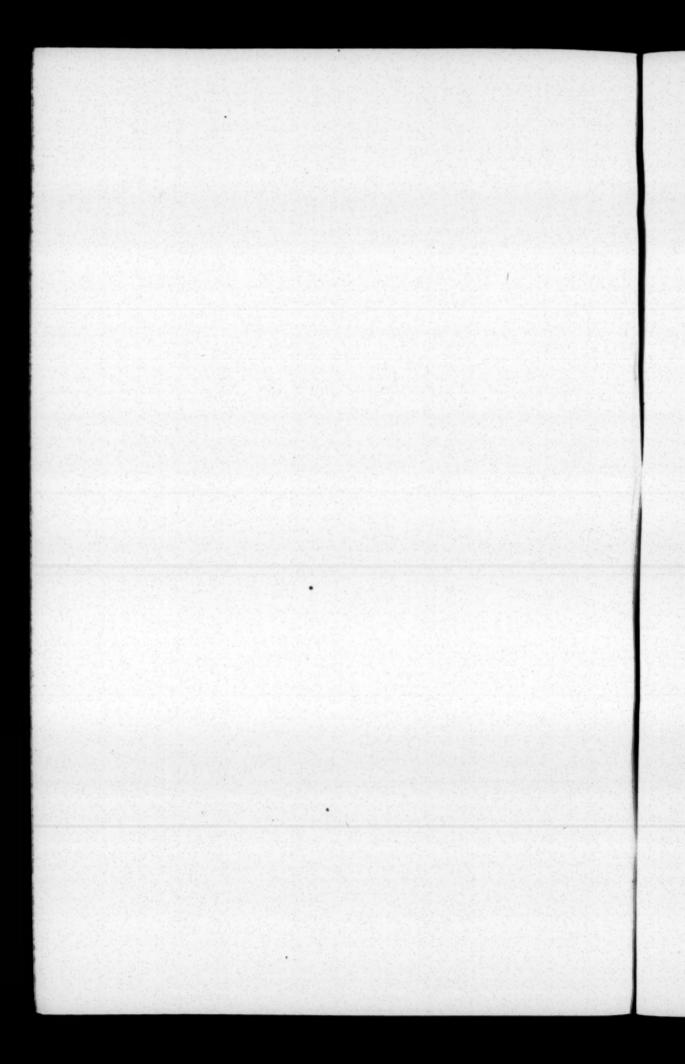
By the Dean of St. PATRICK's.



DUBLIN:

Printed by and for GEORGE FAULKNER,

M,DCC,XXXVII.





A

PROPOSALS

FOR GIVING

BADGES, &c.

that the Poor-House, especially since the new Constitution by Act of Parliament, hath been of no Benefit to this City, for the Ease of which it was wholly intended. I had the Honour to be a Member of it many Years before it was new modelled by the Legislature; not from any personal Regard, but meerly as one of the two Deans, who are of Course put into most Commissions that relate to the City; and I have likewise the Honour to have been left out of several Commissions upon the Score of Party, in which my Predecessor, Time out of Mind, have always been Members.

THE first Commission was made up of about fifty Persons, which were the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Sheriffs, and some few other Citizens; The Judges, the two Arch-Bishops, the two Deans of the City, and one or two more Gentlemen. And I must confess my Opinion, that the dissolving the old Commission, and establishing a new one of near three Times the Number, have been the great Cause of rendering so good a Design not only use-less, but a Grievance instead of a Benefit to the City. In the present Commission all the City-Clergy are included, besides a great Number of 'Squires, not only those who reside in Dublin, and the Neighbourhood, but several who live at a great Distance, and cannot possibly have the least Con-

cern for the Advantage of the City.

AT the few General Meetings that I have attended fince the new Establishment, I observed very little was done except one or two Acts of extream Justice, which I then thought might as well have been spared: And I have found the Court of Affiftants usually taken up in little Brangles about Coachmen, or adjusting Accounts of Meal and Small-Beer; which, however Necessary, might fometimes have given Place to Matters of much greater Moment, I mean fome Schemes recommended to the General Board, for answering the chief Ends in erecting and establishing such a Poor-House, and endowing it with so considerable a Revenue: And the principal End I take to have been that of maintaining the Poor and Orpnans of the City, where the Parishes are not able to do it; and clearing the Streets from all Strollers, Foreigners, and flurdy Beggars, with which, to the univerfal Complaint and Admiration, Dublin is more infelted fince the Establishment of the Poor-House. than it was ever known to be fince its first Erection.

As the whole Fund for supporting this Hospital is raised only from the Inhabitants of the City; so there can be hardly any Thing more absurd than to see it misemployed in maintaining Foreign Beggars and Bastards, or Orphans, whose Country Landlords never contributed one Shilling towards their Support. I would engage, that half this Revenue, if employed with common Care, and no very great Degree of common Honesty, would maintain all the real Objects of Charity in this City, except a small Number of Original Poor in every Parish, who might without being burthensome to the Pa-

rishioners find a tolerable Support.

I HAVE for some Years past applied my self to feveral Lord Mayor, and to the late Arch-Bishop of Dublin, for a Remedy to this Evil of Foreign Beggars; and they all appeared ready to receive a very plain Propofal, I mean, that of badging the Original Poor of every Parish, who begged in the Streets; That, the faid Beggars should be confined to their own Parishes; That, they should wear their Badges well fown upon one of their Shoulders, always visible, on Pain of being whipt and turned out of Town; or whatever legal Punishment may be thought proper and effectual. But, by the wrong Way of thinking in fome Clergymen, and the Indifference of others, this Method was perpetually defeated to their own continual difquiet, which they do not ill deserve; and if the Grievance affected only them, it would be of lefs Consequence; because the Remedy is in their own Power. But, all Street-walkers, and Shop-keepers, bear an equal Share in this hourly Vexation.

I NEVER heard more than one Objection against this Expedient of badging the Poor, and confining their Walks to their several Parishes. Vol. VI. M The

The Objection was this: What shall we do with the Foreign Beggars? Must they be left to starve? I answered, No; but they must be driven or whipt out of Town; and let the next Country Parish do as they please, or rather after the Practice in England, fend them from one Parish to another, until they reach their own Homes. By the old Laws of England still in Force, and I prefume by those of Ireland, every Parish is bound to maintain its own Poor; and the Matter is of no fuch Confequence in this Point as fome would make it, whether a Country Parish be rich or poor. In the remoter and poorer Parishes of the Kingdom, all Necessaries for Life proper for poor People are comparatively cheaper; I mean Butter-milk, Oatmeal, Potatoes, and other Vegitables; and every Farmer or Cottager who is not himfelf a Beggar, can fometimes spare a Sup or a Morfel, not worth the fourth Part of a Farthing, to an indigent Neighbour of his own Parish, who is disabled from Work. A Beggar Native of the Parish is known to the 'Squire, to the Church Minister, to the Popish Priest, or the Conventicle Teachers, as well as to every Farmer: He hath generally fome Relations able to live, and contribute fomething to his Maintenance. None of which Advantages can be reasonably expected on a Removal to Places where he is altogether unknown. If he be not quite maimed, he and his Trull, and Litter of Brats (if he hath any) may get half their Support by doing fome Kind of Work in their Power, and thereby be less burthensome to the People. short, all Necessaries of Life grow in the Country, and not in Cities, and are cheaper where they grow; nor is it equal that Beggars should put us to the Charge of giving them Victuals, and the Carriage too.

down

But, when the Spirit of wandring takes him, attended by his Female, and their Equipage of Children, he becomes a Nuisance to the whole Country: He and his Female are Thieves, and teach the Trade of stealing to their Brood at four Years old; and if his Infirmities be counterfeit, it is dangerous for a single Person unarmed to meet him on the Road. He wanders from one County to another, but still with a View to this Town, whither he arrives at last, and enjoys all the Priviledges of a Dublin Beggar.

I no not wonder that the Country 'Squires should be very willing to send up their Colonies; but why the City should be content to receive them,

is beyond my Imagination.

If the City were obliged by their Charter to maintain a thousand Beggars, they could do it cheaper by eighty per Cent. a hundred Miles off,

than in this Town, or any of its Suburbs.

THERE is no Village in Connaught, that in Proportion shares so deeply in the Daily encreasing Miferies of Ireland, as its Capital City; to which Miferies there hardly remained any Addition, except the perpetual Swarms of Foreign Beggars, who might be banished in a Month without Expence, and

As I am personally acquainted with a great Number of Street Eeggars, I find some weak Attempts have been made in one or two Parishes to promote the wearing of Badges; and my first Question to those who ask an Alms is, Where is your Badge? I have in several Years met with about a Dozen who were ready to produce them, some out of their Pockets, others from under their Coat, and two or three on their Shoulders, only covered with a Sort of Capes which they could lift up or let.

M1 2

down upon Occasion. They are too lazy to work; they are not afraid to fteal, nor ashamed to beg, and yet are too proud to be feen with a Badge, as many of them have confessed to me, and not a few in very injurious Terms, particularly the Females. They all look upon fuch an Obligation as a high Indignity done to their Office. I appeal to all indifferent People whether fuch Wretches deserve to be relieved. As to my felf, I must confess, this abfurd Infolence hath fo affected me, that for feveral Years past, I have not disposed of one single Farthing to a Street Beggar, nor intend to do fo until I see a better Regulation; and I have endeavoured to perfuade all my Brother-walkers to follow my Example, which most of them assure me they do. For, if Beggary be not able to beat out Pride, it cannot deferve Charity. However, as to Persons in Coaches and Chairs, they bear but little of the Perfecution we fuffer, and are willing to leave it entirely upon us.

To fay the Truth, there is not a more undeferving vicious Race of human Kind than the Bulk of those who are reduced to Beggary, even in this beggarly Country. For, as a great Part of our publick Miseries is originally owing to our own Faults (but, what those Faults are I am grown by Experience too wary to mention) so I am consident, that among the meaner People, nineteen in twenty of those who are reduced to a starving Condition, did not become so by what Lawyers call the Work of God, either upon their Bodies or Goods; but meerly from their own Idleness, attended with all Manner of Vices, particularly Drunkenness, Thievery,

and Cheating.

WHOEVER enquires, as I have frequently done, from those who have asked me an Alms, what

was their former Course of Life, will find them to have been Servants in good Families, broken Tradesmen, Labourers, Cottagers, and what they call decayed Housekeepers; but (to use their own Cant) reduced by Losses and Crosses, by which nothing can be understood but Idleness and Vice.

As this is the only Christian Country where People contrary to the old Maxim, are the Poverty and not the Riches of the Nation; fo, the Bleffing of Increase and Multiply is by us converted into a Curfe: And, as Marriage hath been ever countenanced in all free Countries, fo we should be less miserable if it were discouraged in ours, as far as can be confiftent with Christianity. It is seldom known in England, that the Labourer, the lower Mechanick, the Servant, or the Cottager, thinks of marrying until he hath faved up a Stock of Money fufficient to carry on his Bufiness; nor takes a Wife without a fuitable Portion; and as feldom fails of making a yearly Addition to that Stock, with a View of providing for his Children. But, in this Kingdom the Cafe is directly contrary, where many thousand Couples are yearly married, whose whole united Fortunes, bating the Rags on their Backs, would not be fufficient to purchase a Pint of Butter-milk for their Wedding Supper, nor have any Prospect of supporting their bonourable State but by Service, or Labour, or Thievery. Nay, their Happiness is often deterred until they find Credit to borrow, or cunning to feeal a Shilling to pay their Popish Priest, or infamous Couple-Beggar. Surely no miraculous Portion of Wifdom would be required to find fome kind of Remedy against this destructive Evil, or at least, not to draw the Confequences of it upon our decaying City,

City, the greatest Part whereof must of Course in a few Years become desolate, or in Ruins.

In all other Nations, that are not absolutely barbarous, Parents think themselves bound by the Law of Nature and Reason to make some Provision for their Children; but the Reasons offered by the Inhabitants of *Ireland* for marrying, is, that they may have Children to maintain them when

they grow old and unable to work.

I AM informed that we have been for some Time past extremely obliged to England for one very beneficial Branch of Commerce: For, it feems they are grown fo Gracious as to transmit us continually Colonies of Beggars, in Return of a Million of Money they receive Yearly from hence. I may give no Offence, I profess to mean real English Beggars in the literal Meaning of the Word, as it is usually understood by Protestants. It feems, the Juffices of the Peace and Parish Officers in the Western Coasts of England, have a good while followed the Trade of exporting hither their supernumerary Beggars, in order to advance the English Protestant Interest among us; and, these they are so kind to fend over Gratis, and Du-I have had the Honour more than once tv-free. to attend large Cargoes of them from Chefter to Dublin: And I was then fo ignorant as to give my Opinion, that our City should receive them into Bridewell, and after a Month's Residence, having been well whipt twice a Day, fed with Bran and Water, and put to hard Labour, they should be returned honeftly back with Thanks as cheap as they came: Or, if that were not approved of, I proposed, that whereas one English Man is allowed to be of equal intrinfick Value with twelve born in Ireland, we should in Justice return them a Do-

zen

zen for One, to dispose of as they pleased. But to return.

As to the native Poor of this City, there would be little or no Damage in confining them to their feveral Parishes. For Instance; a Beggar of the Parish of St. Warborough's, or any other Parish here, if he be an Object of Compassion, hath an equal Chance to receive his Proportion of Alms from every charitable Hand; because the Inhabitants, one or other, walk through every Street in Town, and give their Alms, without considering the Place, wherever they think it may be well disposed of: And, these Helps, added to what they get in Eatables by going from House to House, among the Gentry and Citizens, will, without being very burthensome, be sufficient to keep them alive.

It is true, the Poor of the Suburb Parishes will not have altogether the same Advantage, because they are not equally in the Road of Business and Passengers: But here it is to be considered, that the Beggars there have not so good a Title to Publick Charity, because most of them are Strollers from the Country, and compose a principal Part of that great Nuisance, which we ought to remove.

I SHOULD be apt to think, that few Things can be more irksome to a City-Minister, than a Number of Beggars which do not belong to his District, whom he hath no Obligation to take Care of, who are no Part of his Flock, and who take the Bread out of the Mouths of those, to whom it properly belongs. When I mention this Abuse to any Minister of a City-Parish, he usually lays the Fault upon the Beadles, who he says are bribed by the foreign Beggars; and, as those Beadles often keep Ale-Houses, they find their Account in such

Customers.

Customers. This Evil might easily be remedyed, if the Parishes would make some small Addition to the Salaries of a Beadle, and be more careful in the Choice of those Officers. But, I conceive there is one effectual Method, in the Power of every Minister to put in Practice; I mean, by making it the Interest of all his own original Poor, to drive out Intruders: For, if the Parish-Beggars were absolutely forbidden by the Minister and Church-Officers, to suffer Scrollers to come into the Parish, upon Pain of themselves being not permitted to beg Alms at the Church-Doors, or at the Houses and Shops of the Inhabitants; they would prevent Interlopers more effectually than twenty Beadles.

AND, here I cannot but take Notice of the great Indifcretion in our City-Shopkeepers, who fuffer their Doors to be daily befieged by Crowds of Beggars, (as the Gates of a Lord are by Duns,) to the great Difgust and Vexation of many Cuftomers, whom I have frequently observed to go to other Shops, rather than suffer such a Persecution; which might easily be avoided, if no foreign Beggars were allowed to insest them.

WHEREFORE, I do affert, that the Shopkeepers who are the greatest Complainers of this Grievance, lamenting that for every Customer, they are worried by fifty Beggars, do very well deserve what they suffer, when a 'Prentice with a Horse-Whip is able to lash every Beggar from the Shop, who is not of the Parish, and doth not wear the Badge of that Parish on his Shoulder, well fastned and fairly visible; and if this Practice were universal in every House, to all the sturdy Vagrants, we should in a sew Weeks clear the Town of all Mendicants, except those who have a proper Title

to our Charity: As for the Aged and Infirm, it would be fufficient to give them nothing, and then

they must starve or follow their Brethren.

IT was the City that first endowed this Hospital, and those who afterwards contributed, as they were such who generally inhabited here; so they intended what they gave to be for the Use of the City's Poor. The Revenues which have since been raised by Parliament, are wholly paid by the City, without the least Charge upon any other Part of the Kingdom; and therefore nothing could more defeat the original Design, than to misapply those Revenues on strolling Beggars, or Bastards from the Country, which bears no Share in the Charges we are at.

If fome of the Out-Parishes be over-burthened with Poor, the Reason must be, that the greatest Part of those Poor are Strollers from the Country, who nestle themselves where they can find the cheapest Lodgings, and from thence insest every Part of the Town, out of which they ought to be whipped as a most insusferable Nuisance, being nothing else but a profligate Clan of Thieves, Drunkards, Heathens, and Whore-Mongers, fitter to be rooted out of the Face of the Earth, than suffered to levy a vast annual Tax upon the City, which shares too deep in the publick Miseries brought on us by the Oppressions we like under from our Neighbours, our Brethren, our Countrymen, our Fellow Protestants, and Fellow Subjects.

Some Time ago I was appointed one of a Committee to inquire into the State of the Workhouse; where we found that a Charity was bestowed by a great Person for a certain Time, which in its Consequences operated very much to the Detriment of the House: For, when the Time was empsed, all

thole

those who were supported by that Charity, continued on the same Foot with the rest on the Foundation; and being generally a Pack of profligate vagabond Wretches from several Parts of the Kingdom, corrupted all the rest; so partial, or treacherous, or interested, or ignorant, or mistaken, are generally all Recommenders, not only to Em-

ployments, but even to Charity it felf.

I know it is complained, that the Difficulty of driving Foreign Beggars out of the City is charged upon the Bellowers (as they are called) who find their Accounts best in suffering those Vagrants to follow their Trade through every Part of the Town. But, this Abuse might easily be remedyed, and very much to the Advantage of the whole City, if better Salaries were given to those who execute that Office in the feveral Parishes, and would make it their Interest to clear the Town of those Caterpillars, rather than hazard the Lofs of an Employment that would give them an honest Livelyhood. But, if that should fail, yet a general Resolution of never giving Charity to a Street Beggar out of his own Parish, or without a visible Badge, would infallibly force all Vagrants to depart.

THERE is generally a Vagabond Spirit in Beggars, which ought to be discouraged and severely punished. It is owing to the same Causes that drove them into Povery; I mean, Idleness, Drunkenness, and rash Marriages without the least Prospect of supporting a Family by honest Endeavours; which never came into their Thoughts. It is observed, that hardly one Beggar in twenty looks upon himself to be relieved by receiving Bread or other Food; and they have in this Town been frequently seen to pour out of their Pitcher good Broth that hath been given them, into the Kennel; nei-

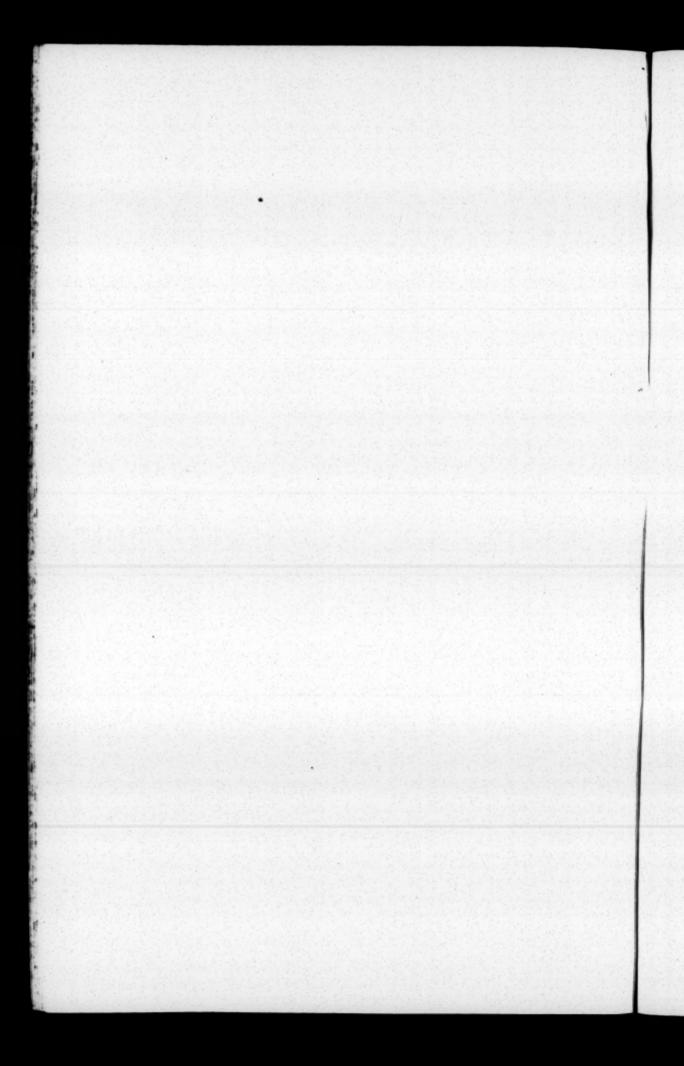
ther do they much regard Cloaths, unless to sell them; for, their Rags are Part of their Tools with which they work: They want only Ale, Brandy, and other strong Liquors, which cannot be had without Money; and, Money as they conceive,

always abounds in the Metropolis.

I HAD some other Thoughts to offer upon this Subject. But, as I am a Desponder in my Nature, and have tolerably well discovered the Disposition of our People, who never will move a Step towards easing themselves from any one single Grievance; it will be thought, that I have already said too much, and to little or no Purpose; which hath often been the Fate, or Fortune of the Writer,

J. SWIFT.

April 22, 1737.



NEW SIMILE

FOR THE

LADIES,

WITH

Useful Annotations.

ANDAN

ANSWER to it.

To make a Writer miss his End, You've nothing else to do but mend.

WRITTEN in the YEAR, 1733.



Printed by and for GEORGE FAULKNER.

MDCCXXXVII.

THE following Poem is writ by
the Reverend Dr. SH—N,
which we have thought proper to infert here, as our supposed Author, published an Answer to it, which immediately follows this.



A

NEW SIMILE

FOR THE

LADIES, &c.



OFTEN try'd in vain to find
A * Simile for Woman-kind,
A Simile I mean to fit 'em,
In every Circumstance to hit + 'em,
Thro' ev'ry Beast and Bird I went,

I ranfack'd ev'ry Element,
And after peeping thro' all Nature,
To find fo whimfical a Creature,
A Cloud | prefented to my View,
And straight this Parallel I drew;

Clouds turn with ev'ry Wind about, They keep us in Sufpence and Doubt,

* Most Ladies in reading call this Word a Smile, but they are to note, it consists of three Syllables, Simi-lc. In English, a Likeness.

+ Not to burt them.

Not like a Gun or Piftol.

Yet oft perverse like Woman-kind Are seen to seud against the Wind, And are not Women just the same? For, who can tell at what they * aim?

Clouds keep the stoutest Mortals under,
When † bellowing they discharge their Thunder;
So when the Alarm-Bell is rung,
Of || Xante's everlasting Tongue,

The

* This is not meant as to shooting, but resolving.

† The Word bellowing is not here to be understood

of a Bull; but a Cloud, which makes a Noise like a

Bull when it Thunders.

Nanti, a Nick-name for Xantippe, that Scold of glorious Memory, who never let poor Socrates have one Moment's Peace of Mind, yet with unexampled Patience, he bore her pestilential Tongue. I shall beg the Ladies Pardon, if I insert a sew Passages concerning her, and at the same Time I assure them, it is not to lessen those of the present Age, who are possest of the like laudable Talerts; for, I will confess, that I know three in the City of Dublin, no Way inserior to Xantippe, but that they have not as great Men to work upon.

When a Friend asked Socrates, how he could hear the Scolding of his Wife Kantippe, he retorted, and asked him, how he could hear the Gagling of his Geese; av, but my Geese lay Eggs for me, reply'd his Friend; so doth my Wise hear Children, said Socrates. Diog.

Lacrt.

Being asked at another Time by a Friend, how he could hear her Tongue, he said, she was of this Use to him, that she taught him to hear the Impertinencies of others

The Husband dreads its Loudness more, Than Light'ning's Flash, or Thunder's Roar.

Clouds weep as they do without Pain, And what are Tears but Women's Rain?

THE Clouds about the Welkin * roam;
And Ladies never stay at home.

THE Clouds build Castles in the Air, A Thing peculiar to the Fair; For all the Schemes of their + Forecasting, Are not more solid, nor more lasting.

others with more Ease, when he went abroad. Plut, de Capiend. ex host. utilit.

Socrates invited his Friend Euthydemus to Supper. Xantippe in great Rage went in to them, and overset the Table. Euthydemus rising in a Passion to go off, My dear Friend, stay, said Socrates, did not a Hen do the same Thing at your House the other Day, and did I shew any Resentment? Plut. de irâ cohibendâ.

I could give many more Instances of her Termaganey, and his Philosophy, if such a Proceeding might not look as if I were glad of an Opportunity to expose the fair Sex; but to shew I have no such Design, I declare solemnly, that I had much worse Stories to tell of her Behaviour to her Hushand, which I rather passed over on Account of the great Esteem which I hear the Ladies, especially those in the honourable Station of Matrimony.

* Ramble.

+ Not vomiting.

A Cloud is light by Turns, and dark,
Such is a Lady with her Spark;
Now, with a fudden * pouting Gloom,
She feems to darken all the Room;
Again, she's pleas'd, his Fears + beguil'd,
And all is clear, when she has smil'd.
In this they're wondrously alike,
(I hope the Simile will || strike)
Tho' in the darkest ** Dumps you view 'em,
Stay but a Moment, you'll see through 'em.

THE Clouds are apt to make ++ Reflection,
And frequently produce Infection;
So Calia, with small Provocation,
Blasts ev'ry Neighbour's Reputation.

THE Clouds delight in gaudy Show, For they like Ladies, have their Beau; The gravest || || Matron will confess, That she her self is fond of Dress.

OBSERVE the Clouds in Pomp array'd, What various Colours are display'd,

* Thrusting out the Lip.

+ This is to be understood not in the Sense of Wort when Brewers put Yest or Barm in it; but its true Meaning is, Deceived, or Cheated.

| Hit your Fancy.

** Sullen Fits. We have a merry Jigg call'd, Dumptey-Deary, invented to rouze Ladies from the Dumps.

++ Reflection of the Sun.
HH Motherly Women.

The Pink, the Rose, the Vi'let's Dye, In that great Drawing-Room the Sky, How do these differ from our * Graces, In Garden-Silks, Brocades, and Laces? Are they not such another Sight, When met upon a Birth-Day Night?

THE Clouds delight to change their Fashion, (Dear Ladies, be not in a Passion)

Nor let this Whim to you seem strange,
Who ev'ry Hour delight in Change.

In them and you alike are seen The sullen Symptoms of the Spleen, The Moment that your Vapours rise, We see them dropping from your Eyes.

In Ev'ning fair you may behold The Clouds are fring'd with borrow'd Gold, And this is many a Lady's Case, Who flants about in † borrow'd Lace.

GRAVE Matrons are like Clouds of Snow, Their Words fall thick, and foft, and flow,

* Not Grace before and after Meat, nor their Graces the Dutchesses, but the Graces which attended on Venus.

† Not Flanders-Lace, but Gold and Silver-Lace. By borrowed, I mean, such as run in bonest Tradesmen's Debts, for what they were not able to pay, as many of them did for French Silver-Lace, against the last Birth-Day, Vid. the Shop-keeper's Books.

180 A NEW SIMILE for, &c. While brisk * Coquets, like rattling Hail, Our Ears on ev'ry Side assail.

Clouds when they intercept our Sight, Deprive us of Celestial Light: So when my Chloe I pursue, No Heav'n besides, I have in View.

Thus, on + Comparison you see, In ev'ry Instance they agree, So like, so very much the same, That one may go by t'other's Name. Let me || proclaim it then aloud, That ev'ry Woman is a Cloud.

* Girls who love to hear themselves prate, and put on a Number of Monkey Airs to catch Men.

+ I hope none will be so uncomplaisant to the La-

dies, as to think these Comparisons odious.

|| Tell it to the whole World, not to proclaim them as Robbers and Rapparees.

ANSWER

To a SCANDALOUS

POEM,

WHEREIN

The AUTHOR most audaciously presumes to cast an Indignity upon their Highnesses the CLOUDS, by comparing them to a WOMAN.

Written by DERMOT O-NEPHELY, Chief * Cap of Howth.

* The highest Point of Howth is called the Cap of Howth.

Written in the Year 1732.



ADVERTISEMENT

From the CLOUDS.

N. B. The following Answer to that sourcilous Libel against us, should have been published long ago in our own Justification: But it was advised, that, considering the high Importance of the Subject, it should be deferred until the Meeting of the Great Assembly of the Nation.



AN

ANSWER

To a SCANDALOUS

POEM, &c.

Resumptuous Bard! How cou'd you dare

A Woman with a Cloud compare?

Strange Pride and Insolence you show,
Inserior Mortals there below.

And, is our Thunder in your Ears 5
So frequent or fo loud as theirs?
Alas! our Thunder foon goes out;
And only makes you more devout.
Then, is not Female Clatter worse,
That drives you, not to pray, but curse?

WE hardly Thunder thrice a Year; The Bolt discharg'd, the Sky grows clear:

But,

But, ev'ry fublunary Dowdy,
The more she sclouds, the more she's cloudy.

Some Critick may object, perhaps,
That Clouds are blam'd for giving Claps;
But, what alas are Claps Ætherial,
Compar'd for Mischief, to Venereal?
Can Clouds give Bubo's, Ulcers, Blotches,
Or from your Noses dig out Notches?

We leave the Body sweet and sound;
We kill, 'tis true, but never wound;

You know a Cloudy Sky bespeaks
Fair Weather, when the Morning breaks;
But, Women in a Cloudy Plight,
Foretel a Storm to last till Night.

A Cloud, in proper Seasons pours
His Bleffings down in fruitful Show'rs;
But, Woman was by Fate design'd
To pour down Curses on Mankind.

WHEN * Syrius o'er the Welkin rages
Our kindly Help his Fire affwages;
But Woman is a curst Inflamer,
No Parish Ducking-Stool can tame her:
To kindle Strife, Dame-Nature taught her:
35
Like Fire-works, she can burn in Water.

For Fickleness how durst you blame us?
Who for our Constancy are famous.

. The Dog-Star.

scandalous POEM, &c.	85
You'll fee a Cloud in gentle Weather	
Keep the same Face an Hour together:	40
While Women, if it could be reckon'd,	77
Change ev'ry Feature, ev'ry Second.	
OBSERVE our Figure in a Morning;	
Of Foul or Fair we give you warning;	
But, can you guess from Woman's Air,	45
One Minute, whether Foul or Fair?	
Go read in antient Books enrolled,	
What Honours we posses'd of old!	
To disappoint Ixion's Rape,	
JOVE dreft a Cloud in Juno's Shape:	50
Which when he had enjoy'd, he fwore	
No Goddess could have pleas'd him more,	
No Diff'rence could he find between	
His Cloud, and JOVE's Imperial Queen:	
His Cloud produc'd a Race of Centaurs,	55
Fam'd for a thousand bold Adventures;	33
From us descended ab origine;	
By learned Authors call'd, Nubigenæ.	
But fay, what Earthly Nymph do you know,	
So beautiful to pass for Juno?	60
Before Æneas durst aspire	
To court her Majesty of Tyre,	
His Mother begg'd of us to dress him,	
That Dido might the more carefs him:	
A Coat we gave him, dy'd in Grain;	65
A Flaxen Wig, and Clouded Cane.	The

......

1

(The Wig was powder'd round with Sleet, Which fell in Clouds beneath his Feet)
With which he made a tearing Show:
And Dido quickly smoak'd the Beau.

70

Among your Females make Inquiries; What Nymph on Earth so fair as Iris? With heav'nly Beauty so endow'd? And yet her Father is a Cloud. We dress'd her in a Gold Brocade, Besitting Juno's sav'rite Maid.

75

'Tis known, that Socrates the wife,
Ador'd us Clouds as Deities;
To us he made his daily Prayers,
As Aristophanes declares:
From Jupiter took all Dominion,
And dy'd defending his Opinion.
By his Authority, 'tis plain
You worship other Gods in vain:
And from your own Experience know,
We govern all Things there below.
You follow where we please to guide;
O'er all your Passions we preside;
Can raise them up, or sink them down,
As we think fit to smile or frown:
And, just as we dispose your Brain,

80

90

85

We, to whom all the Gods give Place:

Are witty, dull, rejoyce, complain.

Who

feandalous POEM, &c.	187
Who better challenge your Allegiance,	95
Because we dwell in higher Regions:	
You find, the Gods in Homer dwell,	
In Seas, and Streams, or low as Hell:	
Ev'n Jove, and Mercury his Pimp,	
No higher climb than Mount Olymp,	100
(Who makes you think, the Clouds he pierces	s:
He pierce the Clouds! He kiss their Ar-es.)	
While we, o'er Tenariffa plac't,	
Are loftier by a Mile at least:	
And when Apollo struts on Pindus,	105
We fee him from our Kitchen-windows:	
Or, to Parnassus looking down,	
Can pss upon his Lawrel Crown.	

FATE never form'd'the Gods to fly; In Vehicles they mount the Sky: OII When JOVE would fome fair Nymph inveigle, He comes full gallop on his Eagle. Though Venus be as light as Air, She must have Doves to draw her Chair. Apollo stirs not out of Door, 115 Without his lacker'd Coach and Four, And, jealous Juno, ever fnarling, Is drawn by Peacocks in her Berlin: But, we can fly where-e'er we pleafe, O'er Cities, Rivers, Hills, and Seas: 120 From East to West, the World we roam; And, in all Climates are at home; With Care provide you as we go, With Sun-shine, Rain, and Hail, or Snow.

You,

en it rains, like Fools believe, 125
es on you through a Sieve :
ale, 'tis no fuch Matter;
ip a Spunge in Water;
eeze it close between our Thumbs,
it well, and down it comes. 130
ll to your Sorrow know;
ch your Steps where-e'er you go:
we find, you walk a-foot
dly fouce your Frize Surtout.
it well, and down it comes. Il to your Sorrow know; th your Steps where-e'er you go: we find, you walk a-foot

Tis but by our peculiar Grace,

That Phæbus ever shows his Face:

For, when we please, we open wide

Our Curtains blue, from Side to Side:

And then, how saucily he shows

His brazen Face, and siery Nose:

And gives himself a haughty Air,

As if He made the Weather fair.

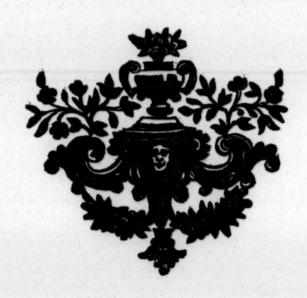
'Tis fung, where-ever Celia treads,
The Vi'lets ope their Purple Heads;
The Roses blow, the Cowslip springs;
'Tis fung, but we know better Things.
'Tis true; a Woman on her Mettle,
Will often p--ss upon a Nettle;
But, though we own, she makes it wetter,
The Nettle never thrives the better:
While we, by soft prolifick Show'rs,
Can ev'ry Spring produce you Flow'rs.

Your Poets, Chloe's Beauty height'ning,

Compare her radiant Eyes to Light'ning;
And yet, I hope, 'twill be allow'd,
That Light'ning comes but from a Cloud.

But, Gods like us, have too much Sense At Poet's Flights to take Offence. Nor can Hyperboles demean us; Each Drab has been compar'd to Venus: 160

WE own, your Verses are melodious; But such Comparisons are odious.



ALET-



A

LETTER

TO THE

Reverend Dr. SH-N.

Written in the Year 1718.

SIR,



HATE'ER your Predecessors taught us?
I have a great Esteem for Plautus;
And think your Boys may gather
there-hence

More Wit and Humour than from Terence.

But as to Comic Aristophanes,
The Rogue's too Bawdy and too Prophane is.
I went in vain to look for Eupolis,
Down in the * Strand just where the new Pole is,
For I can tell you one Thing, that I can,
You will not find it in the Vatican.

* N. B. The Strand in LONDON. The Fast may be false, but the Rhyme cost me some Trouble.

He

He and Cratinus used, as Horace says, To take his greatest Grandees for Asses. Poets, in those Days, us'd to venture high, But these are lost full many a Century.

Thus you may fee, dear Friend, ex pede hence My Judgment of the old Comedians.

PROCEED to Tragicks, first Euripides

(An Author, where I sometimes dip a Days)

Is rightly censur'd by the Stagirite,

Who says, his Numbers do not sadge a-right.

A Friend of mine, that Author despises

So much, he swears the very best Piece is

For ought he knows, as bad as Thespis's.

And that a Woman, in those Tragedies

Commonly speaking, but a sad Jade is.

At least, I'm well assured, that no Folk lays

The Weight on him, they do on Sophocles.

But above all I prefer Æschylus,

Whose moving Touches, when they please, kill us-

AND now I find my Muse but ill able
To hold out longer in Trysyllable.
I chose these Rhymes out, for their Difficulty.
Will you return as hard ones, if I call t'ye?



THE

Reverend Dr. SH--N

TO

J. S. D. D. D. S. P. D.



EAR Dean, fince in Cruxes and Puns you and I deal,

Pray why is a Woman a Sieve and a Riddle?

'Tis a Thought that came into my Noddle this Morning,

In Bed as I lay, Sir, a toffing and turning.
You'll find, if you read but a few of your Histories,
All Women, as Eve, all Women are Mysteries.
To find out this Riddle, I know you'll be eager,
And make every one of the Sex a Bell-phagor.
But that will not do, for I mean to come-mend 'em,
I swear without Jest, I an Honour intend 'em.
In a Sieve, Sir, their ancient Extraction I quite tell,
In a Riddle I give you their Power and their Title.
This I told you before, do you know what I mean,
Sir?

- * Not I, by my Troth, Sir .-- Then read it again, Sir.
 - * The Dean's Anfaver.

The Reason I send you these Lines of Rhymes double,

Is purely through pity, to fave you the Trouble
Of thinking two Hours for a Rhyme, as you did
laft;

When your Pegasus canter'd in triple, and rid fast.

As for my little Nag, which I keep at Parnassus With Phabus's Leave, to run with his Asses. He goes flow and sure, and he never is jaded, While your fiery Steed is whipp'd, spurr'd, bastinaded.

D_n S___'s Answer

TO THE

Reverend Doctor S H-N.

SIR,

N reading your Letter alone in my
Hackny,
Your damnable Riddle, my poor

Brains did rack nigh.

And when with much Labour the Matter I crackt,

I found you mistaken in Matter of Fact,

VOL. VI.

0

A

1 ...

A Woman's no Sieve (for with that you begin) Because she let's out more, than e'er she takes in. And that she's a Riddle, can never be right, For a Riddle is dark, but a Woman is light. But grant her a Sieve, I can say something archer, Pray what is a Man? he's a fine-Linen Searcher.

Now tell me a Thing that wants Interpretation, What Name for a * Maid, was the first Man's Damnation?

If your Worship will please to explain me this Rebus,

I fwear from henceforward you shall be my Phabus.

From my Hackney-Coach, Sept. 11, 1712. Past 12

* Vir Gin.

at Noon.





Having found the following Letters in the first Volume of Mr. POPE's Literary Correspondence lately published by himself; and, as they relate to our supposed Author, we have thought proper to insert them here, together with his Answers, to make this Volume as compleat as possible.

Mr. POPE to Doctor SWIFT.

August 1723.



FIND a Rebuke in a late Letter of yours, that both stings and pleases me extreamly. Your saying that I ought to have writ a Postscript to my Friend Gay's, makes me not content to write

his kindly, gives me Hopes you will look upon this as a fincere Effect of Friendship. Indeed, as I cannot but own the Laziness with which you tax me, and with which I may equally charge you, for both of us have had (and one of us has both had and given) a Surfeit of writing, so I really thought you would know your self to be so certainly intitled to

0 2

my Friendship, that it was a Possession you could not imagine stood in need of any farther Deeds or

Writings to affure you of it.

WHATEVER you feem to think of your withdrawn and feparate State, at this Distance, and in this Absence, Dean Swift lives still in England, in every Place and Company where he would chuse to live, and I find him in all the Conversations I keep, and in all the Hearts in which I desire any Share.

WE have never met these many Years without mention of you! Besides my old Acquaintance, I have found that all my Friends of a later Date are fuch as were yours before. Lord Oxford, Lord Harcourt, and Lord Harley, may look upon me as one intailed upon them by you. Lord Bolingbroke is now returned (as I hope) to take Me with all his other Hereditary-Rights; and, indeed, he feems grown fo much a Philosopher, as to set his Heart upon some of them as little, as upon the Poet you gave him. It is fure my ill Fate, that all those I most loved, and with whom I have most lived, must be banished: After both of you left England, my constant Host was the Bishop of Rochester; fure this is a Nation that is curfedly afraid of being over rum with too much Politeness, and cannot regain one great Genius, but at the Expence of another. I tremble for my Lord Peterborough (whom I now lodge with) he has too much Wit, as well as Courage, to make a folid General; and if he esapes being barished by others, I fear he will banish him-This leads me to give you some Account of my Manner of Life and Conversation, which has been infinitely more various and diffipated, than when you knew me and cared for me; and among all Sexes, Parries, and Professions. A Glut of Study and Retirement, in the first Part of my Life, caft

caft me into this; and this I begin to see will throw

me again into Study and Retirement.

THE Civilities I have met with from opposite Setts of People, have hindred me from being violent or four to any Party; but at the same Time the Observations and Experiences I cannot but have collected, have made me lefs fond of, and lefs furprized at, any: I am therefore the more afflicted and the more angry at the Violences and Hardships I fee practifed by either. The merry Vein you knew me in, is funk into a Turn of Reflection, that has made the World pretty indifferent to me; and yet I have acquired a quietness of Mind which by Fits improves into a certain Degree of Chearfulness, enough to make me just so good humoure das to wish that World well. My Friendships are increafed by new ones, yet no Part of the Warmth I felt for the old is diminished. Aversions I have none, but to Knaves (for Fools I have learned to bear with) and fuch I cannot be commonly civil to; for I think those next to Knaves who converse with The greatest Man in Power of this Sort, shall hardly make me bow to him, unless I had a Personal Obligation to him, and that I will take Care not to have. The top Pleasure of my Life is one I learned from you, both how to gain and how to use, the Freedom of Friendship with Men much my Superiors. To have pleased great Men, according to Horace, is a Praise; but not to have flattered them, and yet not have displeased them, is a greater. I have carefully avoided all Intercourse with Poets and Scriblers, unless where by great Chance I have found a modest one. By thefe Means I have had no Quarrels with any personally: None have been Enemies but who were also Strangers to me; and as there is no great Need of an Eclaireifment

Eclaircisment with such, whatever they writ or said I never retaliated; not only never seeming to know, but often really never knowing any Thing of the Matter. There are very sew Things that give me the Anxiety of a Wish; the strongest I have would be to pass my Days with you, and a few such as you: But Fate has dispersed them all about the World; and I find to wish it is as vain, as to wish to live to see the Millennium and the Kingdom of the Just upon Earth.

If I have finned in my long Silence, confider there is one to whom you your felf have been as great a Sinner. As foon as you fee his Hand, you will learn to do me Justice, and feel in your Heart how long a Man may be filent to those he truly

Loves and Respects.

Lord BOLINGBROKE

TO

Doctor SWIFT.

AM not so lazy as Pope, and therefore you must not expect from me the same Indulgence to Laziness; in defending his own Cause he pleads yours, and becomes your Advocate while he appeals to you as his Judge; you will do the same on your Part; and I, and the rest of your common Friends, shall have great Justice to expect from two such righteous Tribunals: You resemble perfectly the two Alehouse-Keepers in Holland,

who were at the same Time Burgomasters of the Town, and taxed one anothers Bills alternately. I declare before hand I will not stand to the Award; my Title to your Friendship is good, and wants neither Deeds nor Writings to confirm it: But annual Acknowledgements at least are necessary to preserve it; and I begin to suspect by your defrauding me of them, that you hope in Time to dispute it, and to urge Prescription against me. I would not say one Word to you about my self (since it is a Subject on which you appear to have no Curiosity) was it not to try, how far the Contrast between Pope's Fortune and manner of Life, and

mine, may be carried.

I HAVE been then infinitely more uniform and less diffipated, than when you knew me and cared That Love which I used to scatter with for me. fome Profusion, among the whole Female Kind, has been these many Years devoted to one Object. A great many Misfortunes (for fo they are called, though fometimes very improperly) and a Retirement from the World, have made that just and nice Discrimination between my Acquaintance and my Friends, which we have feldom Sagacity enough to make for our felves; those Infects of various Hues, which used to hum and buz about me while I stood in the Sunshine, have disappeared since I lived in the Shade. No Man comes to a Hermitage but for the Sake of the Hermit; a few philosophical Friends come often to mine, and they are fuch as you would be glad to live with, if a dull Climate and duller Company have not altered you extreamly from what you was nine Years ago.

The hoarse Voice of Party was never heard in this quiet Place; Gazettes and Pamphlets are banished from it, and if the Lucubrations of Islan Bickerstap

Bickerstaff are admitted, this Distinction is owing to fome Strokes by which it is judged that this illustrious Philosopher, had (like the Indian Fobu, the Grecian Pythagoras, the Persian Zoroaster, and others his Precurfors among the Arabians, Magians, and the Egyptian Seres) both his outward and his inward Doctrine, and that he was of no Side at the Bottom — When I am there, I forget I was ever of any Party my felf; nay, I am often so happily absorbed by the abstracted Reason of Things, that I am ready to imagine there never was any fuch Monster as Party, Alas, I am soon awakened from that pleafing Dream by the Greek and Roman Hiftorians, by Guicciardin, by Machiavel, and by Thuanus; for I have vowed to read no History of our own Country, till that Body of it which you pro-

mife to finish appears.

I AM under no Apprehensions that a glut of Study and Retirement should cast me back into the hurry of the World; on the contrary, the fingle Regret which I ever feel, is that I fell fo late into this Course of Life: My Philosophy grows confirmed by Habit, and if you and I meet again I will extort this Approbation from you, I am confilio bonus, sed more co productus, ut non tantum reste facere possim, sed nil non reste sacere non possim. The little Incivilities I have met with from opposite Setts of People, have been fo far from rendring me violent or four to any, that I think my felf obliged to them all; fome have cured me of my Fears, by shewing me how impotent the Malice of the World is; others have cured me of my Hopes, by shewing how precarious popular Friendships are; all have cured me of Surprize; in driving me out of Party, they have driven me out of curfed Company; and in stripping me of Titles, and Rank, and Estate, and

and fuch Trinkets, which every Man that will may fpare, they have given me that which no Man can be

happy without.

REFLECTION and Habit have rendered the World fo indifferent to me, that I am neither afflicted nor rejoyced, angry nor pleafed at what happens in it, any farther than personal Friendships interest me in the Affairs of it, and this Principle extends my Cares but a little Way. Perfect Tranquility is the general Tenour of my Life; good Digeftions, ferene Weather, and fome other mechanic Springs. wind me above it now and then, but I never fall below it; I am fometimes gay, but I am never fad; I have gained new Friends, and have lost some old ones; my Acquisitions of this Kind give me a good deal of Pleasure, because they have not been made lightly: I know no Vows fo folemn as those of Friendship, and therefore a pretty long noviciate of Acquaintance should methinks precede them; my Losses of this Kind give me but little Trouble, I contributed nothing to them, and a Friend who breaks with me unjustly is not worth preserving. As foon as I leave this Town (which will be in a few Days) I shall fall back into that Course of Life. which keeps Knaves and Fools at a great Distance from me; I have an Aversion to them both, but in the ordinary Course of Life I think I can bear the fenfible Knave better than the Fool: One must indeed with the former be in some or other of the Attitudes of those Wooden Men whom I have seen before a Sword-Cutler's Shop in Germany; but even in these constrained Postures the witty Rascal will divert me; and he that diverts me does me a great deal of good, and lays me under an Obligation to him, which I am not obliged to pay him in another Coin: The Fool obliges me to be almost as much upon

upon my Guard as the Knave, and he makes me no amends; he numbs me like the Torpor, or he teizes me like the Fly. This is the Picture of an old Friend, and more like him than that will be which you once asked, and which he will send you, if you continue still to desire it. —— Adieu, dear Swist, with all thy Faults I love thee intirely; make an Effort, and love me on with all mine.

From Doctor SWIFT

TO

Mr. P O P E.

Dublin, Sept. 20, 1723.

ETURNING from a Summer Expedition of four Months on Account of my Health, I found a Letter from you, with an Appendix longer than yours from my Lord Bolingbroke. I believe there is not a more miserable Malady than an Unwillingness to write Letters to our best Friends, and a Man might be a Philosopher enough in finding out Reasons for it; one Thing is clear, that it shews a mighty Difference betwixt Friendship and Love, for a Lover (as I have heard) is always scribling to his Mistress. If I could permit my felf to believe what your Civility makes you fay, that I am still remembred by my Friends in England, I am in the Right to keep my felf here --- Non fum qualis eram. I left you in a Period of Life when one Year doth more Exe-

They

cution than three at yours, to which if you add the Dulness of the Air, and of the People, it will make a terrible Sum. I have no very strong Faith in you Pretenders to Retirement; you are not of an Age for it, nor have gone through either good or bad Fortune enough, to go into a Corner, and form Conclusions de contemptu mundi & fuga seculi, unless a Poet grows weary of too much Applause, as Ministers do of too much Weight of Business.

Your Happiness is greater than your Merit, in chusing your Favourites so indifferently among either Party; this you owe partly to your Education, and partly to your Genius employing you in an Art in which Faction has nothing to do; for I suppose Virgil and Horace are equally read by Whigs and Tories. You have no more to do with the Constitution of Church and State, than a Christian at Constantinople; and you are so much the wifer and the happier, because both Parties will approve your Poetry as long as you are known to be of neither.

Your Notions of Friendship are new to me, I believe every Man is born with his quantum, and he cannot give to one without robbing another. very well know to whom I would give the first Place in my Friendship, but they are not in the Way: I am condemned to another Scene, and therefore I distribute it in Penny-worths to those about me, and who displease me least; and should do the same to my Fellow-Prisoners if I were condemned to a Jayl. I can likewife tolerate Knaves much better than Fools, because their Knavery doth me no Hurt in the Commerce I have with them, which however I own is more dangerous, although not fo troublesome as that of Fools. I have often endeavoured to establish a Friendship among all Men of Genius, and would fain have it done:

They are feldom above three or four Contemporaties, and if they could be united, would drive the World before them. I think it was so among the Poets in the Time of Augustus; but Envy, and Party, and Pride, have hindered it among us. I do not include the Subalterns, of which you are seldom without a large Tribe: Under the Name of Poets and Scriblers, I suppose you mean the Fools you are content to see sometimes, when they happen to be modest; which was not frequent among them while I was in the World.

I would describe to you my Way of living, if any Method could be called fo in this Country. I chuse my Companions among those of least Consequence and most Complyance: I read the most trifling Books I can find, and whenever I write, it is upon the most trifling Subjects: But riding, walking, and fleeping take up eighteen of the twenty four Hours. I procrastinate more than I did twenty Years ago, and have feveral Things to finish which I put off to twenty Years hence; bec est vita Solutorum, &c. I send you the Compliments of a Friend of yours, who hath paffed four Months this Summer with two grave Acquaintance at his Country House, without ever once going to Dublin, which is but eight Miles diftant; yet when he returns to London, I will engage you shall find him as deep in the Court of Requests, the Park, the Opera's and the Coffee-house, as any Man there. I am now with him for a few Days.

You must remember me with great Affection to Dr. Arbutbnot, Mr. Congreye, and Gay—— I think there are no more eodem tertio's between you and me, except Mr. J—— to whose House I address this, for want of knowing where you live; for it was not clear from your last whether you lodge

with

From Mr. POPE

T O

Doctor S W I F T.

December 10, 1725

FIND my felf the better acquainted with you for a long Absence, as Men are with themfelves for a long Affliction: Absence does but hold off a Friend, to make one see him the more truly. I am infinitely more pleafed to hear you are coming near us, than at any Thing you feem to think in my Favour; an Opinion which perhaps has been aggrandized by the Distance or dulness of Ireland, (as Objects look larger through a Medium of Foggs) and yet I am infinitely pleafed with that too. I am much the happier for finding (a better Thing than our Wits) our Judgments jump, in the Notion that all Scriblers should be past by in Silence. To vindicate ones self against fuch nafty Slander, is much as wife as it was in your Country-man, when the People imputed a Stink to him, to prove the contrary by showing his Backfide. So let Gildon and Philips rest in Peace! What Virgil had to do with Manius, that he should wear him upon his Sleeve to all Eternity, I don't I've been the longer upon this, that I may prepare you for the Reception both you and your Works may possibly meet in England. We your Man, and love you; others will look upon you as a good Man, and love you; others will look upon you as a Wit, and hate you. So you know the worst; unless you are as vindicative as Virgil, or the aforefaid Hibernian.

I wish as warmly as you for an Hospital in which to lodge the Despisers of the World; only I fear it would be fill'd wholly like Chelsea, with maimed Soldiers, and fuch as had been disabled in its Service. I wou'd rather have those, that out of fuch generous Principles as you and I despise it, fly in its Face, then retire from it. Not that I have much Anger against the Great; my Spleen is at the little Rogues of it: It would vex one more to be knock'd on the Head with a Piss-pot, than by a Thunder-bolt. As to great Oppressors, they are like Kites or Eagles, one expects Mischief from them, but to be squirted to Death (as poor Wycherly faid to me on his Death-Bed) by Apothecaries Apprentices, by the Understrappers of Under-Secretaries to Secretaries who were no Secretaries this would provoke as dull a Dog as P-s himfelf.

So much for Enemies, now for Friends. Mr. L—thinks all this indifcreet: The Dr. not so: He loves Mischief the best of any good natur'd Man in England. Lord Bolingbroke is above trisling: When he writes of any Thing in this World, he is more than mortal; if ever he Trisles, it must be when he turns a Divine. Gay is writing Tales for Prince William: I suppose Mr. Philips will take this very ill, for two Reasons; one that he thinks all childish Things belong to him; and the other, because he'll take it ill to be taught that one may write Things to a Child without being childish. What have I more to add? But that Lord Oxford desires

defires earnestly to see you: And that many others whom you do not think the worst of will be gratified by it; none more (be affured) than yours, &c.

FROM THE

Earl of PETERBOROUGH

Mr. P O P E.

HENEVER you apply as a good Papift to your Female Mediatrix, you are fure of Success; but there is not a full Affurance of your entire Submission to Mother-church, and that abates a little of your Authority. However if you will accept of Country Letters, she will correspond from the Haycock and I will write to you upon the Side of my Wheelbarrow: Surely fuch Letters might escape Examination!

Your Idea of the Golden Age is, that every Shepherd might pipe where he pleased. As I have lived longer, I am more moderate in my Wishes, and would be content with the Liberty of not pi-

ping where I am not pleafed.

OH how I wish, to my felf and my Friends, a Freedom which Fate feldom allows, and which we often refuse ourselves! Why is our Shepherdess in voluntary Slavery? Why must our Dean submit to the Colour of his Coat, and live abfent from us? And why are you confined to what you cannot relieve ?

I SELDOM venture to give Accounts of my Journeys before-hand, because I take Resolutions of going to London, and keep them no better than quarrelling Lovers do theirs. But the Devil will drive me thither about the Middle of next Month. and I will call upon You, to be fprinkled with Holy Water, before I enter the Place of Corruption. Your, &c.

From the Same.

1732.

AM under the greatest Impatience to see Dr. Swift at Bevis Mount, and must fignify my Mind to him by another Hand, it not being permitted me to hold Correspondence with the faid Dean, for no Letter of mine can come to his Hands.

AND whereas it is apparent, in this Protestant Land most especially under the Care of Divine Providence, that nothing can fucceed or come to a happy Issue but by Bribery; therefore let me know what he expects to comply with my Defires, and it

shall be remitted unto him.

For though I would not corrupt any Man for the whole World, yet a Benevolence may be given without any Offence to Conscience; every one must confess that Gratification and Corruption are two diftinct Terms; nay at worst many good Men hold, that for a good End fome very naughty Mea fures may be made Use of.

But Sir, I must give you some good News in relation to my felf, because I know you wish me well; I am cur'd of some Diseases in my old Age,

which

which tormented me very much in my Youth.

I was possest with violent and uneasy Passions, such as a peevish Concern for Truth, and a saucy love for my Country.

WHEN a Christian Priest preached against the Spirit of the Gospel, when an English Judge determined against Magna Charta, when the Minister acted against common Sense, I used to fret.

Now, Sir, let what will happen, I keep myself in Temper: As I have no flattering Hopes, so I banish all useless Fears: But as to the Things of this World, I find my self in a Condition beyond expectation; it being evident from a late Parliamentary inquiry, that I have as much ready Money, as much in the Funds, and as great a personal Estate, as Sir Robert S-tt-n.

Is the Translator of Homer find Fault with this unheroick Disposition, or what I more fear, if the Drapier of Ireland accuse the Englishman of want of Spirit; I silence you both with one Line out of your own Horace, Quid to exempta juvat spinis e pluribus una? For I take the whole to be so corrupted, that a Cure in any Part would be of little avail. Yours, &c.



Vol. VI.

FROM

FROM

Doctor S W I F T

TO THE

Earl of PETERBOROUGH.

My LORD,

NEVER knew or heard of any Person so volatile and so fixt as your Lordship: You, while your Imagination is carrying you through every Corner of the World where you have, or have not been, can at the same Time remember to do Offices of Favour and Kindness to the meanest of your Friends; and in all the Scenes you have passed, have not been able to attain that one Quality peculiar to a great Man, of forgetting every Thing but Injuries. Of this I am a living Witness against you, for being the most insignificant of all your old humble Servants, you were so cruel as never to give me Time to ask a Favour, but prevented me in doing whatever you thought I desired, or could be for my Credit or Advantage.

I HAVE often admired at the Capriciousness of Fortune, in regard to your Lordship. She hath forced Courts to act against their oldest, and most constant Maxims; to make you a General, because you had Courage and Conduct; an Ambassador, because you had Wisdom and Knowlege in the Interests

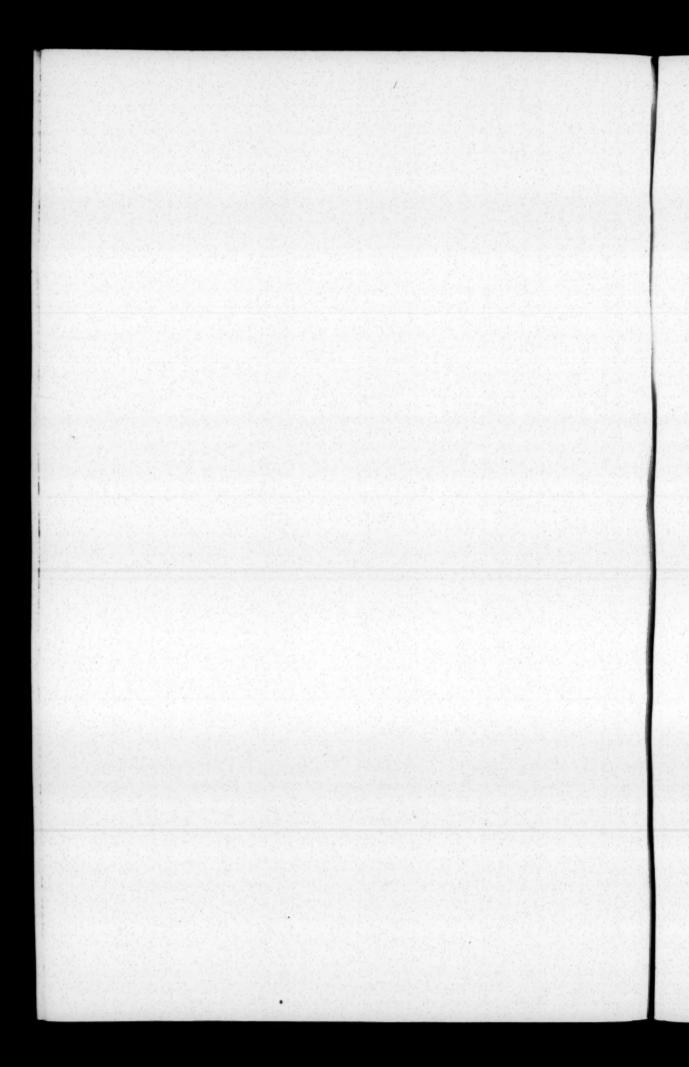
Interests of Europe; and an Admiral, on Account of your Skill in maritime Affairs; whereas according to the usual Method of Court Proceedings, I should have been at the Head of the Army, and you of the Church, or rather a Curate under the Dean of St. Patrick's.

THE* Arch-Bishop of Dublin laments that he did not see your Lordship till he was just upon the Point of leaving the Bath; I pray God you may have found Success in that Journey, else I shall continue to think there is a Fatality in all your Lordship's Undertakings, which only terminate in your own Honour, and the Good of the Publick, without the least Advantage to your Health or Fortune.

I REMEMBER Lord Oxford's Ministry used to tell me, that not knowing where to write to you, they were forced to write at you. It is so with me, for you are in one Thing an Evangelical Man, that you know not where to lay your Head, and I think you have no House. Pray my Lord write to me, that I may have the Pleasure in this enslaved Country, of going about, and shewing my depending Parsons a Letter from the Earl of Peterborow. I am, &c.

* Dr. KING.





TREATISE

ON

Polite Conversation?

By SIMON WAGSTAFF, Efq;



DUBLIN: Printed in the Year,
M,DCC,XXX,VIII.

Vot. VI.

Q

AN

ERRATA,

To the following Treatife.

Page 231. Line 12. for Direction, read Discretion.

Page 234. Line 11. for I have therefore, by the chief Patterns, read Wherein I follow the chief Patterns.





AN

INTRODUCTION

To the following

TREATISE.



S my Life hath been chiefly spent in consulting the Honour and Welfare of my Country, for more than forty Years past; not without answerable Success, if the World, and my Friends, have not flattered me; so,

there is no Point wherein I have so much laboured, as that of improving, and polishing all Parts of Conversation between Persons of Quality, whether they meet by Accident or Invitation, at Meals, Tea, or Visits, Mornings, Noons, or Evenings.

I HAVE passed, perhaps, more Time, than any other Man of my Age and Country, in Visits, and Q a Assemblies,

Assemblies, where the polite Persons, of both Sexes, diftinguish themselves; and could not, without much Grief observe, how frequently both Gentlemen, and Ladies, are at a Loss for Questions, Anfwers, Replies, and Rejoynders. However, my Concern was much abated, when I found, that thefe Defects were not occasioned by any Want of Materials, but because these Materials were not in every For Instance: One Lady can give an Anfwer better than ask a Question. One Gentleman is happy at a Reply; another excels in a Rejoynder: One can revive a languishing Conversation, by a fudden furprizing Sentence; another is more dextrous in feconding; a third can fill the Gap with laughing or commending what hath been faid. Thus, fresh Hints may be started, and the Ball of Discourse kept up.

But alas, this is too feldom the Case, even in the most select Companies. How often do we see at Court, at publick visiting Days, or great Men's Levees, and other Places of general Meeting, that the Conversation salls and drops to nothing, like a Fire without supply of Fuel. This is what we all ought to lament; and against this dangerous Evil, I take upon me to affirm, that I have in the sollowing Papers provided an infallible Remedy.

It was in the Year 1695, and the Sixth of his late Majesty King WILLIAM the Third, of ever glorious and immortal Memory, who rescued three Kingdoms from Popery and Slavery; when being about the Age of six and thirty, my Judgment mature, of good Reputation in the World, and well acquainted with the best Families in Town; I determined to spend sive Mornings, to dine sour Times, pass three Asternoons, and six Evenings every Week, in the Houses of the most polite Families;

INTRODUCTION. 21

milies; of which I would confine my felf to fifty; only changing as the Masters or Ladies died, or left the Town, or grew out of Vogue, or sunk in their Fortunes, or (which to me was of the highest Moment) became disaffected to the Government: Which Practice I have followed ever since, to this very Day; except, when I happened at any Time to be sick, or in the Spleen upon cloudy Weather; and except, when I entertained sour of each Sex in my own Lodgings once a Month, by Way of Retaliation.

I ALWAYS kept a large Table-Book in my Pocket; and as foon as I left the Company, I immediately entred the choicest Expressions that passed during the Visit; which, returning home, I transcribed in a fair Hand, but somewhat enlarged; and had made the greatest Part of my Collection in twelve Years, but not digested into any Method: For, this I found was a Work of infinite Labour, and what required the nicest Judgment, and confequently could not be brought to any Degree of Perfection, in less than sixteen Years more: Herein, I resolved to exceed the Advice of Horace, a Roman Poet, (which I have read in Mr. Creech's admirable Translation) that an Author should keep his Works nine Years in his Closet, before he ventured to publish them; and finding, that I still received some additional Flowers of Wit and Language, although in a very small Number, I determined to defer the Publication, to purfue my Defign, and exhauft, if possible, the whole Subject, that I might present a compleat System to the World. For, I am convinced by long Experience, that the Criticks will be as fevere as their old Envy against me can make them. I foresee they will object, that I have inferted many Answers and Replies, Willela which are neither witty, humourous, polite, or authentick; and have omitted others, that would have been highly useful, as well as entertaining. But let them come to Particulars, and I will boldly

engage to confute their Malice.

For these last six or seven Years, I have not been able to add above nine valuable Sentences to enrich my Collection: From whence I conclude, that what remains, will amount only to a Trisse. However, if after the Publication of this Work, any Lady or Gentleman when they have read it, shall find the least Thing of Importance omitted, I desire they will please to supply my Desects, by communicating to me their Discoveries; and their Letters may be directed to Simon Wagstaff, Esq; at his Lodgings next Door to the Glocester Head in St. James's Street, (paying the Postage) in return of which Favour, I shall make honourable mention of their Names in a short Presace to the second Edition.

In the mean Time, I cannot but with fome Pride, and much Pleasure, congratulate with my dear Country, which hath outdone all the Nations of Europe, in advancing the whole Art of Converfation, to the greatest Height it is capable of reach-And therefore, being entirely convinced, that the Collection I now offer to the Publick, is full and compleat; I may at the same Time boldly affirm, that the whole Genius, Humour, Politeness, and Eloquence of England, are summed up Nor, is the Treasure small, wherein are to be found, at least, a thousand shining Questions, Answers, Repartees, Replies, and Rejoynders, fitted to adorn every Kind of Discourse that an Asfembly of English Ladies, and Gentlemen, met together for their mutual Entertainment can possibly want;

want: especially when the several Flowers shall be fet off and improved by the Speakers with every Circumstance of Preface and Circumlocution in proper Terms; and attended with Praife, Laughter, or Admiration. There is a natural involuntary Diffortion of the Muscles, which is the anatomical Cause of Laughter: But there is another Cause of Laughter which Decency requires, and is the undoubted Mark of a good Tafte, as well as of a polite obliging Behaviour; neither is this to be acquired without much Observation, long Practice, and a found Judgment. I did therefore once intend, for the Ease of the Learner, to set down in all Parts of the following Dialogues, certain Marks. Afterisks, or Nota Bene's, (in English, Markwell's) after most Questions, and every Reply or Answer; directing exactly the Moment when one, two, or all the Company are to laugh. But, having duly confidered that this Expedient would too much enlarge the Bulk of the Volume, and confequently the Price; and likewife, that fomething ought to be lest for ingenious Readers to find out: I have determined to leave the whole Affair, although of great Importance, to their own Discretion.

THE Reader must learn by all Means to distinguish between Proverbs, and those polite Speeches which beautify Conversation: For, as to the former, I utterly reject them out of all ingenious Discourse. I acknowledge indeed, that there may possibly be found in this Treatise a sew Sayings among so great a Number of smart Turns of Wit and Humour as I have produced, which have a proverbial Air. However, I hope it will be considered, that even these were not originally Proverbs, but the genuine Productions of superior Wits, to embellish and support Conversation;

from

220 INTRODUCTION.

from whence, with great Impropriety, as well as Plagiarism, (if you will forgive a hard Word) they have most injuriously been transferred into proverbial Maxims; and therefore, ought in Justice to be resumed out of vulgar Hands, to adorn the Drawing-Rooms of Princes, both Male and Female, the Levees of great Ministers, as well as the Toylet and Tea-Table of the Ladies.

I CAN faithfully affure the Reader, that there is not one fingle witty Phrase in this whole Collection, which hath not received the Stamp and Approbation of at least one hundred Years; and, how much longer, it is hard to determine; he may therefore be secure to find them all genuine, sterling,

and authentick.

But, before this elaborate Treatife can become of universal Use and Ornament to my native Counery, two Points that will require Time and much Application, are absolutely necessary. For, first, whatever Person would aspire to be compleatly Witty, Smart, Humorous, and Polite; must by hard Labour be able to retain in his Memory every fingle Sentence contained in this Work; fo as never to be once at a Loss in applying the right Answers. Questions, Repartees, and the like immediately, and without Study or Hesitation. And secondly, after a Lady or Gentleman hath fo well overcome this Difficulty as to be never at a Loss upon any Emergency; the true Management of every Feature, and almost of every Limb is equally necessary; without which an infinite Number of Abfurdities will inevitably enfue. For Inftance; there is hardly a polite Sentence in the following Dialogue, which doth not absolutely require some peculiar graceful Motion in the Eyes, or Nose, or Mouth, or Forehead, or Chin; or suitable Toss of the Head.

Head, with certain Offices affigned to each Hand; and in Ladies, the whole Exercise of the Fan, fitted to the Energy of every Word she delivers: By no Means omitting the various Turns and Cadencies of the Voice, the Twistings, and Movements, and different Postures of the Body; the several Kinds and Gradations of Laughter, which the Ladies must daily practise by the Looking-Glass, and consult upon them with their Waiting-Maids.

My Readers will foon observe what a great Compass of real and useful Knowledge this Science includes; wherein, although Nature affifted by a Genius, may be very instrumental, yet a strong Memory and conftant Application, together with Example and Precept, will be highly necessary. For these Reasons, I have often wished, that certain Male and Female Instructors, perfectly versed in this Science, would fet up Schools for the Instruction of young Ladies and Gentlemen therein. I remember about thirty Years ago, there was a Bohemian Woman, of that Species commonly known by the Name of Gypfies, who came over hither from France, and generally attended Isaac the Dancing-Mafter, when he was teaching his Art to Misses of Quality; and while the young Ladies were thus employed, the Bobenian standing at some Distance, but full in their Sight, acted before them all proper Airs, and Heavings of the Head, and Motions of the Hands, and Twiftings of the Body; whereof you may still observe the good Effects in feveral of our elder Ladies. After the same Manner, it were much to be desired, that fome expert Gentlewomen, gone to Decay, would fet up publick Schools, wherein young Girls of Quality or great Fortunes, might first be taught to repeat this following System of Conversation, which I have been at fo much Pains to compile; and then to adapt every Feature of their Countenances, every Turn of their Hands, every screwing of their Bodies, every Exercise of their Fans, to the Humour of the Sentences they hear or deliver in Conversation. But above all, to instruct them in every Species and Degree of Laughing, in the proper Seasons at their own Wit, or that of the Company. And, if the Sons of the Nobility and Gentry, instead of being sent to common Shools, or put into the Hands of Tutors at Home, to learn nothing but Words, were configned to able Instructors in the same Art; I cannot find what Use there could be of Books, except in the Hands of those who are to make Learning their Trade; which is below the Dignity of Persons born to Titles or Estates.

IT would be another infinite Advantage, that by cultivating this Science, we should wholly avoid the Vexations and Impertinence of Pedants; who affect to talk in a Language not to be understood; and, whenever a polite Person offers accidentally to use any of their Jargon-Terms, have the Presumption to laugh at us for pronouncing those Words in a genteeler Manner: Whereas, I do here affirm, that whenever any fine Gentleman or Lady condescends to let a hard Word pass out of their Mouths, every Syllable is smoothed and polished in the Paffage; and, it is a true Mark of Politeness both in Writing and Reading, to vary the Orthography as well as the Sound, because we are infinitely better Judges of what will please a distinguishing Ear, than those who call themselves Scholars, can possibly be; who consequently ought to correct their Books, and Manner of pronouncing by the Authority of our Example, from whose Lips they proceed with infinite more Beauty and

Significancy.

But, in the mean Time, until so great, so useful, and so necessary a Design can be put in Execution, (which considering the good Disposition of our Country at present, I shall not despair of living to see) let me recommend the following Treatise, to be carried about as a Pocyet Companion, by all Gentlemen and Ladies, when they are going to visit, or dine, or drink Tea; or, where they happen to pass the Evening without Cards; (as I have sometimes known it to be the Case, upon Disappointments, or Accidents unforeseen) desiring they would read their several Parts in their Chairs or Coaches, to prepare themselves for every Kind of Conversation, that can probably happen.

of Conversation, that can probably happen.

ALTHOUGH I have, in Justice to my Country, allowed the Genius of our People to excel that of any other Nation upon Earth; and have confirmed

this Truth by an Argument not to be controuled, I mean, by producing so great a Number of witty Sentences in the ensuing Dialogues, all of undoubted Authority, as well as of our own Production; yet I must confess, at the same Time, that we are wholly indebted for them to our Ancestors; at least, for as long as my Memory reached, I do not recollect one new Phrase of Importance to have been added: Which Desect in us Moderns, I take to have been occasioned by the Introduction of Cant-Words, in the Reign of King Charles the Second. And these have so often varied, that hardly one of

them of above a Year's standing is now intelligible; nor any where to be found, excepting a small Number strowed here and there in the Commedies, and other santastick Writings of that Age. The Honourable Colonel James Graham, my old Friend and Companion, did likewise towards the End of the fame Reign, invent a Set of Words and Phrases. which continued almost to the Time of his Death. But, as these Terms of Art were adapted only to Courts and Politicians, and extended little further than among his particular Acquaintance, (of whom I had the Honour to be one) they are now almost forgotten. Nor did the late D— of R and E _____ of E ____, fucceed better, although they proceeded no further than fingle Words; whereof, except Bite, Bamboozle, and one or two more, the whole Vocabulary is antiquated. The same Fate hath already attended those other Town Wits, who furnish us with a great Variety of new Terms, which are annually changed, and those of the last Season sunk in Oblivion. Of these, I was once favoured with a compleat Lift, by the Right Honourable the Lord and Lady H, with which I made a confiderable Figure, one Summer, in the Country, but returning up to Town in Winter, and venturing to produce them again, I was partly hooted, and partly not understood.

THE only Invention of late Years, which hath any Way contributed to advance Politeness in Discourse, is that of abbreviating, or reducing Words of many Syllables into one, by lopping off the rest. This Resinement, having begun about the Time of the Revolution, I had some Share in the Honour of promoting it; and I observe to my great Satisfaction, that it makes daily Advancements; and, I hope, in Time will raise our Language to the utmost Persection: Although, I must confess, to avoid Obscurity, I have been very sparing of this Opportunity the following Dislocutes.

this Ornament in the following Dialogues.

BUT,

But, as for Phrases invented to cultivate Conversation, I defy all the Clubs and Coffee-Houses in this Town, to invent a new one, equal in Wit, Humour, Smartness, or Politeness, to the very worst of my Set; which clearly shews, either that we are much degenerated, or that the whole Stock of Materials hath been already employed. I would willingly hope, as I do confidently believe, the latter: Because, having my self for several Months racked my Invention, if possible, to enrich this Treasury with some Additions of my own, (which, however, should have been printed in a different Character, that I might not be charged with impofing upon the Publick) and having flewn them to some judicious Friends, they dealt very fincerely with me; all unanimously agreeing, that mine were infinitely below the true old Helps to Difcourse, drawn up in my present Collection, and confirmed their Opinion with Reasons by which I was perfectly convinced, as well as ashamed of my great Prefumption.

But, I lately met a much stronger Argument to confirm me in the same Sentiments. For, as the great Bishop Burnet, of Salisbury, informs us, in the Presace to his admirable History of his own Times; that he intended to employ himself in polishing it every Day of his Life, (and, indeed in its Kind, it is almost equally polished with this Work of mine) so, it hath been my constant Business, for some Years past, to examine with the utmost Strictness, whether I could possibly find the smallest Lapse in Style, or Propriety through my whole Collection, that in Emulation with the Bishop I might send it abroad, as the most sinished Piece of the Age. It happened one Day, as I was dining in good Company of both Sexes, and watching,

according

according to my Custom, for new Materials, wherewith to fill my Pocket Book, I succeeded well enough, until after Dinner, when the Ladies retired to their Tea, and left us over a Bottle of Wine. But, I found we were not able to furnish any more Materials that were worth the Pains of transcribing. For, the Discourse of the Company was all degenerated into fmart Sayings of their own Invention, and not of the true old Standard; fo, that in absolute Despair, I withdrew, and went to attend the Ladies at their Tea. From whence, I did then conclude, and still continue to believe, either that Wine doth not inspire Politeness, or that our Sex is not able to support it without the Company of Women, who never fail to lead us into the right Way, and there to keep us.

It much encreaseth the Value of these Apophthegms, that unto them we owe the Continuance of our Language for at least an hundred Years; neither is this to be wondered at: Because, indeed, besides the Smartness of the Wit, and Fineness of the Raillery, such is the Propriety and Energy of Expression in them all, that they never can be changed but to Disadvantage, except in the Circumstance of using Abbreviations, which, however, I do not despair, in due Time, to see introduced, having already met them at some of the choice Companies

in Town.

ALTHOUGH this Work be calculated for all Persons of Quality and Fortune, of both Sexes, yet the Reader may perceive, that my particular View was to the Officers of the Army, the Gentlemen of the Inns of Courts, and of both the Universities; to all Courtiers, Male and Female; but, principally to the Maids of Honour, of whom I have been personally acquainted with two and twenty

twenty Setts, all excelling in this noble Endow ment; until fome Years past, I know not how, they came to degenerate into felling of Bargains, and Free-Thinking, not, that I am against either of these Entertainments at proper Seasons, in Complyance with Company, who may Want a Tafte for more exalted Discourse, whose Memories may be short; who are too young to be perfect in their Lessons: Or, (although it be hard to conceive) who have no Inclination to read and learn my Instructions. Besides, I confess, there is a strong Temptation for Court Ladies to fall into the two Amusements above-mentioned, that they may avoid the Censure of affecting Singularity, against the general Current and Fashion of all about them: But however, no Man will pretend to affirm, that either Bargains or Blasphemy, which are the principal Ornaments of Free-Thinking, are fo good a Fund of polite Discourse, as what is to be met with in my Collection. For, as to Bargains; few of them feem to be excellent in their Kind, and have not much Variety, because they all terminate in one fingle Point; and, to multiply them would require more Invention than People have to spare. And, as to Blasphemy or Free-Thinking, I have known some scrupulous Persons of both Sexes, who, by a prejudiced Education, are afraid of Sprights. I must however except the Maids of Honour, who have been fully convinced, by a famous Court-Chaplain, that there is no fuch Place as Hell.

I CANNOT indeed, controvert the Lawfulness of Free-Thinking, because it hath been universally allowed, that Thought is free. But however, although it may afford a large Field of Matter, yet, in my poor Opinion, it seems to contain very little, either

either of Wit or Humour; because, it hath not been antient enough among us, to furnish established authentick Expressions; I mean such as must receive a Sanction from the polite World, before their Authority can be allowed; neither. was the Art of Blasphemy or Free-Thinking, invented by the Court, or by Persons of great Quality, who properly speaking, were Patrons rather than Inventors of it, but first brought in by the Fanatick Faction, towards the End of their Power; and, after the Restoration, carried to Whitehall by the converted Rumpers, with very good Reafon; because, they knew, that King Charles the Second, from a wrong Education, occasioned by the Troubles of his Father, had Time enough to observe, that Fanatick Enthusiasm directly led to Atheism; which agreed with the diffolute Inclinations of his Youth: And, perhaps these Principles were farther cultivated in him by the French Huguenots, who have been often charged for spreading them among us: However, I cannot fee where the Necessity lies of introducing new and foreign Topicks for Conversation, while we have so plentiful a Stock of our own Growth.

Neight, been very sparing in Double-entendres; because, they often put Ladies upon affected Conftraints, and affected Ignorance. In short, they break, or very much entangle the Thread of Discourse; neither am I Master of any Rules to settle the disconcerted Countenances of the Females in such a Juncture: I can therefore only allow Innuendoes of this Kind to be delivered in Whispers, and only to young Ladies under Twenty, who being in Honour obliged to blush, it may produce a

new Subject for Discourse.

PERHAPS,

PERHAPS the Criticks may accuse me of a Defect in my following System of polite Converfation; that there is one great Ornament of Difcourse, whereof I have not produced a fingle Example; which, indeed, I purposely omitted, for fome Reasons, that I shall immediately offer; and, if those Reasons, will not satisfy the Male Part of my gentle Readers; the Defect may be supplied, in some Manner, by an Appendix to the second Edition: Which Appendix shall be printed by itself, and fold for Six-pence stitched, and with a Marble Cover; that my Readers may have no Occasion to complain of being defrauded: The Defect I mean, is, my not having inferted into the Body of my Book, all the Oaths now most in Fashion for embellishing Discourse; especially, fince it could give no Offence to the Clergy, who are feldom, or never admitted to these polite Asfemblies. And, it must be allowed, that Oaths well chosen, are not only very useful Expletives to Matter, but great Ornaments of Style.

WHAT I shall here offer in my own Defence, upon this important Article, will, I hope, be some Extenuation of my Fault. First, I reasoned with my felf, that a just Collection of Oaths, repeated as often as the Fashion requires, must have enlarged this Volume, at least to double the Bulk; whereby, it would not only double the Charge, but likewise make the Volume less commodious for Pocket Carriage. Secondly, I have been affured by some judicious Friends, that themselves have known certain Ladies to take Offence (whether feriously or no) at too great a Profusion of Curfing and Swearing; even, when that Kind of Ornament was not improperly introduced: Which, I confess, did startle me not a little; having never VOL. VI. observed

230 INTRODUCTION.

observed the like, in the Compass of my own Female Acquaintance, at least for twenty Years past. However, I was forced to submit to wifer Judgments than my own. Thirdly, as this most useful Treatise is calculated for all suture Times; I considered, in this Maturity of my Age, how great a Variety of Oaths I have heard, since I began to study the World, and to know Men and Manners. And here, I found it to be true, what I have read in an ancient Poet.

" For, now adays, Men change their Oaths,

" As often as they change their Cloaths."

In fhort, Oaths are the Children of Fashion; they are, in some Sense, almost Annuals, like what I observed before, of Cant-words; and I my felf, can remember about forty different Setts. The old Stock-oaths, I am confident, do not amount to above forty five, or fifty at most; but, the Way of mingling and compounding them, is almost as various, as that of the Alphabet. Sir John Perrot, was the first Man of Quality, whom I find upon Record, to have fworn by G--'s W___s. He lived in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, and was supposed to have been a natural Son of Harry VIII. who might also have probably been his Instructor. This Oath, indeed, still continues, and is a Stock-oath to this Day; so do feveral others, that have kept their primitive natural Simplicity: But, infinitely the greater Number hath been so frequently changed, and dislocated, that if the Inventors were now alive, they could hardly understand them.

Upon these Considerations, I began to apprehend, that if I should insert all the Oaths as now

current; my Book would be out of Vogue with the first Change of Fashion, and grow useless as an old Dictionary. Whereas, the Case is quite otherwise with my Collection of polite Discourse; which, as I before observed, hath descended by Tradition, for at leaft, an hundred Years, without any Change in the Phraseology. I therefore determined with my felf, to leave out the whole System of Swearing; because, both the Male and Female Oaths are all perfectly well known and diftinguished; new Ones are easily learnt, and with a moderate Share of Direction, may be properly applyed on every fit Occasion. However, I must here upon this Article of Swearing, most earnestly recommend to my Readers, that they would please a little to study Variety. For, it is the Opinion of our most refined Swearers, that the fame Oath or Curfe, cannot, confiftent with true Politeness, be repeated above nine Times, in the fame Company, by the fame Person, and at one Sitting.

I AM far from defiring, or expecting, that all the polite and ingenious Speeches contained in this Work, should in the general Conversation between Ladies and Gentlemen, come in fo quick and fo close, as I have here delivered them. By no Means: On the contrary, they ought to be hufbanded better, and spread much thinner. do I make the least Quetlion, but that by a discreet, thrifty Management, they may ferve for the Entertainment of a whole Year; to any Person who doth not make too long, or too frequent Visits in the fame Family. The Flowers of Wit, Fancy, Wildom, Humour, and Politenels, scattered in this Volume, amount to one thousand, seventy and four. Allowing then to every Gentleman and R 2 Lady

Lady thirty visiting Families, (not insisting upon Fractions) there will want but little of an hundred polite Questions, Answers, Replies, Rejoinders, Repartees, and Remarks, to be daily delivered, fresh in every Company, for twelve solar Months; and, even this, is a higher Pitch of Delicacy than the World insists on, or, hath reason to expect. But, I am altogether for exalting this Science to its utmost Perfection.

IT may be objected, that the Publication of my Book, may, in a long Course of Time, prostitute this noble Art to mean and vulgar People. But, I answer; that it is not so easily acquired, as a few ignorant Pretenders may imagine. A Footman can fwear; but he cannot fwear like a Lord. He can swear as often: But, can he swear with equal Delicacy, Propriety, and Judgment? No certainly; unless he be a Lad of superior Parts, of good Memory, a diligent Observer, one who hath a skilful Ear, some Knowledge in Musick, and an exact Taste; which hardly falls to the Share of one in a thousand among that Fraternity, in as high Favour as they now stand with their Ladies; neither, perhaps hath one Footman in fix, fo fine a Genius, as to relish and apply those exalted Sentences comprised in this Volume, which I offer to the World: It is true, I cannot fee that the fame ill Confequences would follow from the Waitingwoman, who, if she hath been bred to read Romances, may have fome small subaltern or secondhand Politeness; and, if she constantly attends the Tea, and be a good Liftner, may, in some Years, make a tolerable Figure; which, will ferve perhaps, to draw in the young Chaplain, or the old Steward. But, alas! after all, how can she acquire, those hundreds of Graces and Motions, and Airs,

the

the whole military Management of the Fan, the Contorsions of every muscular Motion in the Face; the risings and fallings; the quickness, and slackness of the Voice, with the several Tones and Cadences; the proper Junctures of smiling and frowning; how often, and how loud to laugh; when to jibe and when to flout; with all the other Branches of Doctrine and Discipline above recited. I am therefore, not under the least Apprehension, that this Art will be ever in Danger of falling into common Hands, which requires so much Time, Study, Practice, and Genius, before it arrives to Perfection: And therefore, I must repeat my Proposal for erecting publick Schools, provided with the best and ablest Masters and Mistresses, at the

Charge of the Nation.

I HAVE drawn this Work into the Form of a Dialogue, after the Pattern of other famous Writers in History, Law, Politicks, and most other Arts and Sciences, and I hope it will have the tame Success: For, who can contest it to be of greater Consequence to the Happiness of these Kingdoms, than all human Knowledge put together. Dialogue is held the best Method of inculcating any Part of Knowledge: And, as I am confident, that publick Schools will foon be founded for teaching Wit and Politenels, after my Scheme, to young People of Quality and Fortune; fo I have determined, next Sessions, to deliver a Petition to the House of Lords, for an Act of Parliament to establish my Book, as the standard Grammar, in all the principal Cities of both Kingdoms, where this Art is to be taught, by able Matters, who are to be approved and recommended by me; which is no more than Lilly obtained, only for teaching Words in a Language wholly useless; Neither, thall

234 INTRODUCTION.

shall I be so far wanting to my self, as not to defire a Patent, granted of Course to all useful Projectors; I mean, that I may have the sole Prosit of giving a Licence to every such School, to read my Grammar for sourcen Years.

THE Reader cannot but observe, what Pains I have been at in polishing the Style of my Book to the greatest Exactness: Nor, have I been less diligent in refining the Orthography, by fpelling the Words in the very fame Manner that they are pronounced. I have therefore, by the chief Patterns of Politeness, at Court, at Levees, at Affemblies, at Play-houses, at the prime visiting Places, by young Templers, and by Gentlemen Commoners of both Universities, who have lived, at leaft, a Twelve-month in Town, and kept the best Company: Of these Spellings, the Publick will meet with many Examples, in the following Book: For Instance, can't, ha'v't, sha'n't, didn't, coodn't, woodn't, isn't, e'n't,; with many more. Befides feveral Words, which Scholars pretend, are derived from Greek and Latin; but now pared into a polite Sound, by Ladies, Officers of the Army, Courtiers and Templers; fuch as Jommetry for Geometry, Verdi for Verdict, Lard for Lord, Larnin for Learning; together with fome Abbreviations exquisitely refined: As, Pozz for Politively, Mobb for Mobile, Phizz. for Physiognomy, Rep for Reputation, Plenipo for Plenipotentiary, Incog for Incognito, Hipps, or Hippo for Hypocondriacks, Bam for Bamboozle, and Bamboozle for God knows what; whereby much Time is faved, and the high Road to Conversation, cut short by many a Mile.

I HAVE, as it will be apparent, laboured very much, and I hope with Felicity enough, to make

every Character in the Dialogue, agreeable with itfelf; to a Degree, that whenever any judicious Person shall read my Book aloud for the Entertainment and Instruction of a select Company, he need not so much as name the particular Speakers; because, all the Persons throughout the several Subjects of Conversation, strictly observe a different Manner peculiar to their Characters, which are of different Kinds; but, this I leave entirely to the prudent and impartial Reader's Discernment.

Perhaps, the very Manner of introducing the feveral Points of Wit and Humour, may not be less entertaining and instructing than the Matter itself: In the latter, I can pretend to little Merit; because, it entirely depends upon Memory, and the Happiness of having kept polite Company. But, the Art of contriving that those Speeches should be introduced naturally, as the most proper Sentiments to be delivered upon so great a Variety of Subjects; I take to be a Talent somewhat uncommon, and a Labour that sew People could hope to succeed in; unless, they had a Genius particularly turned that Way, added to a sincere disinterested Love of the Publick.

ALTHOUGH, every curious Question, smart Answer, and witty Reply, be little known to many People; yet, there is not one single Sentence in the whole Collection, for which I cannot bring most authentick Vouchers, whenever I shall be called: And, even for some Expressions, which to a sew nicer Ears, may perhaps appear somewhat gross, I can produce the Stamp of Authority from Courts, Chocolate-houses, Theatres, Assemblies, Drawing-rooms, Levees, Card-meetings, Balls, and Masquerades; from Persons of both Sexes, and of the highest Titles next to Royal. Howe-

ver, to fay the Truth, I have been very sparing in my Quotations of such Sentiments that seem to be over free; because, when I began my Collection, such kind of Converse was almost in its Infancy, until it was taken into the Protection of my honoured Patronesses at Court; by whose Countenance and Sanction, it hath become a choice Flower, in

the Nofegay of Wit and Politeness.

Some will, perhaps, object, that when I bring my Company to Dinner, I mention too great a Variety of Dishes, not always consistent with the Art of Cookery, or proper for the Season of the Year; and part of the first Course mingled with the Second; besides a Failure in Politeness, by introducing Black-pudding to a Lord's Table, and at a great Entertainment: But, if I had omitted the Black-pudding, I defire to know, what would have become of that exquisite Reason given by Miss Notable for not eating it. The World perhaps might have loft it for ever, and I should have been justly answerable for having left it out of my Collection. I therefore cannot but hope, that fuch Hypercritical Readers, will please to consider, my Business was to make so full and compleat a Body of refined Sayings, as compact as I could; only taking Care, to produce them in the most natural and probable Manner, in order to allure my Readers into the very Substance and Marrow of this most admirable and necessary Art.

I AM heartily forry, and was much disappointed to find; that so universal and polite an Entertainment as Cards, hath hitherto contributed very little to the Enlargement of my Work. I have sate by many hundred Times with the utmost Vigilance, and my Table-Book ready, without being able in eight Hours, to gather Matter for one sin-

gle Phrase in my Book. But this, I think, may be easily accounted for, by the Turbulence and Jostling of Passions upon the various and surprizing Turns, Incidents, Revolutions, and Events, of good and evil Fortune, that arrive in the Course of a long Evening at Play; the Mind being wholly taken up, and the Consequences of Non-Attention fo fatal. Play is supported upon the two great Pillars of Deliberation and Action. The Terms of Art are few; prescribed by Law and Custom. No Time allowed for Digressions or Tryals of Wit, Quadrille in particular, bears some Resemblance to a State of Nature, which we are told, is a State of War, wherein every Woman is against every Woman: The Unions short, inconstant, and foon broke; the League made this Minute, without knowing the Allye; and diffolved in the next. Thus, at the Game of Quadrille, Female Brains are always employed in Stratagem, or their Hands in Action.

NEITHER can I find, that our Art hath gained much by the happy Revival of masquerading among us: The whole Dialogue in these Meetings, being fummed up in one sprightly (I confess, but) fingle Question; and as sprightly an Answer. Do you know me? Yes, I do. And, Do you know me? Yes, I do. For this Reason, I did not think it proper, to give my Readers the Trouble of introducing a Masquerade, meerly for the Sake of a fingle Question, and a fingle Answer. Especially, when to perform this in a proper Manner, I must have brought in a hundred Persons together of both Sexes, dreffed in fantaftick Habits for one Minute, and difiniffed them the next. Neither is it reasonable to conceive, that our Science can be much improved by Masquerades, where the Wit of both Sexes

is altogether taken up in contriving fingular and humourfome Difguises; and their Thoughts entirely employed in bringing Intrigues, and Assigna-

tions of Gallantry to an happy Conclusion.

The judicious Reader will readily discover, that I make Miss Notable, my Heroin; and Mr. Thomas Neverout, my Hero: I have laboured both their Characters with my utmost Ability. It is into their Mouths that I have put the Liveliest Questions, Answers, Repartees, and Rejoynders; because, my Design was to propose them both as Patterns for all young Bachelors, and single Ladies to copy after. By which, I hope, very soon, to see polite Conversation slourish between both Sexes, in a more consummate Degree of Perfection than these Kingdoms have yet ever known.

I HAVE drawn some Lines of Sir John Linger's Character, the Derbysbire Knight, on Purpose to place it in Counterview, or Contrast, with that of the other Company. Wherein, I can affure the Reader, that I intended not the least Reflection upon Derby-shire, the Place of my Nativity. But, my Intention was only to flew the Misfortune of those Persons, who have the Disadvantage to be bred out of the Circle of Politeness, whereof I take the present Limits, to extend no further than Lonion, and ten Miles round, although others are pleafed to confine it within the Bills of Mortality. If you compare the Discourses of my Gentlemen and Ladies with those of Sir John; you will hardly conceive him to have been bred in the fame Climate, or under the fame Laws, Language, Religion, or Government: And, accordingly I have introduced him speaking in his own rude Dialect, for no other Reason than to teach my Scholars how to avoid it.

THE curious Reader will observe, that where Conversation appears in Danger to slag; which, in some Places, I have artfully contrived; I took Care to invent some sudden Question, or Turn of Wit to revive it. Such as these that follow. What? I think here is a silent Meeting. Come Madam, a Penny for your Thought; with several others of the like Sort.

I HAVE rejected all Provincial, or Country Turns of Wit, and Fancy, because I am acquainted with a very few; but indeed, chiefly, because I found them so very much inferior to those at Court, especially among the Gentlemen Ushers, the Ladies of the Bed-Chamber, and the Maids of Honour. I must also add the hither End of our

noble Metropolis.

When this happy Art of polite conversing, shall be thoroughly improved; good Company will be no longer pestered with dull dry tedious Story-tellers, or brangling Disputers. For, a right Scholar of either Sex, in our Science, will perpetually interrupt them with some sudden surprizing Piece of Wit, that shall engage all the Company in a loud Laugh; and, if after a Pause, the grave Companion resumes his Thread, in the sollowing Manner; well; but, to go on with my Story; new Interruptions come from the Lest and Right, until he be forced to give over.

I HAVE likewise made, some sew Essays, towards selling of Bargains, as well for instructing those who delight in that Accomplishment, as in Compliance with my Female Friends at Court. However, I have transgressed a little in this Point, by doing it in a Manner somewhat more reserved, than as it is now practised at St. James's. At the same Time, I can hardly allow this Accomplish-

ment

ment to pass properly for a Branch of that perfect polite Conversation, which makes the constituent Subject of my Treatise; and, for this, I have already given my Reasons. I have, likewise, for further Caution, left a Blank in the critical Point of each Bargain, which, the sagacious Reader may

fill up in his own Mind.

As to my felf; I am proud to own, that except fome Smattering in the French, I am, what the Pedants, and Scholars call, a Man wholly illiterate; that is to fay, unlearned. But, as to my own Language, I shall not readily yield to many Perfons: I have read most of the Plays, and all the Miscellany Poems that have been published for twenty Years past. I have read Mr. Thomas Brown's Works entire, and had the Honour to be his intimate Friend, who was univerfally allowed to be the greatest Genius of his Age. Upon what Foot I stand, with the present chief reigning Wits, their Verses recommendatory, which they have commanded me to prefix before my Book, will be more than a thousand Witnesses. I am, and have been likewise, particularly acquainted with Mr. Cha. Gilden, Mr. Ward, Mr. Dennis, that admirable Critick, and Poet; and several others. Each of these eminent Persons, (I mean those who are still alive) have done me the Honour to read this Production, five Times over, with the strictest Eye of friendly Severity; and proposed some, although very few Amendments, which, I gratefully accepted; and, do here publickly return my Acknowledgment for to fingular a Favour. And, I cannot conceal, without Ingratitude, the great Affiftance I have received from those two illustrious Writers Mr. Ozel, and Captain Stephens. These, and some others, of dittinguished Eminency, in whose Company I have

have passed so many agreeable Hours; as they have been the great Refiners of our Language, fo, it hath been my chief Ambition to imitate them. Let the Popes, the Gays, the Arbuthnots, the Youngs, and the rest of that snarling Brood, burst with Envy at the Praises we receive from the Court, and Kingdom. But, to return from this Di-

greffion.

THE Reader will find, that the following Collection of polite Expressions, will easily incorporate with all Subjects of genteel and fashionable Life. Those which are proper for Morning Tea, will be equally useful at the same Entertainment in the Afternoon, even in the fame Company, only by shifting the several Questions, Answers, and Replies, into different Hands; and, fuch as are adapted to Meals, will indifferently ferve for Dinners, or Suppers, only diftinguishing between Day-Light and Candle-Light. By this Method, no diligent Person of a tolerable Memory, can ever be at a Loss.

IT hath been my constant Opinion, that every Man who is intrusted by Nature, with any useful Talent of the Mind, is bound by all the Tyes of Honour; and, that Justice which we all owe our Country, to propose to himself some one illustrious Action to be performed in his Life, for the publick Emolument: And, I freely confess, that so grand, fo important an Enterprize as I have undertaken, and executed to the best of my Power, well deferved a much abler Hand, as well as a liberal Encouragement from the Crown. However, I am bound fo far to acquit my felf, as to declare, that I have often, and most carnelly intreated several of my above-named Friends, univerfally allowed to be of the first Rank in Wit and Politeness, that they

they would undertake a Work so honourable to themselves, and so beneficial to the Kingdom: But, so great was their Modesty, that they all thought sit to excuse themselves, and impose the Task on me; yet, in so obliging a Manner, and attended with such Compliments, on my poor Qualifications, that I dare not repeat. And, at last, their Intreaties, or rather, their Commands, added to that inviolable Love I bear to the Land of my Nativity, prevailed upon me to engage in so

bold an Attempt.

I MAY venture to affirm, without the least Violation of Modesty, that there is no Man now alive, who hath by many Degrees, so just Pretensions as my felf, to the highest Encouragement from the Crown, the Parliament, and the Ministry, towards bringing this Work to its due Perfection. I have been affured, that several great Heroes of Antiquity, were worshipped as Gods, upon the Merit of having civilized a fierce and barbarous People. It is manifest, I could have no other Intentions; and, I dare appeal to my very Enemies, if fuch a Treatife as mine, had been published some Years ago, and with as much Success, as I am confident this will meet; I mean, by turning the Thoughts of the whole Nobility, and Gentry, to the Study and Practice of polite Conversation; whether such mean, stupid Writers, as the Craftsman, and his Abettors, could have been able to corrupt the Principles of fo many hundred thousand Subjects, as to the Shame and Grief of every whiggish, loyal, true Protestant Heart, it is too manifest they have done. For, I defire the honest, judicious Reader, to make one Remark; that, after I have exhausted the

the whole * infickly Pay-Day (if I may fo call it) of Politeness and Refinement, and faithfully digested it into the following Dialogues, there cannot be found one Expression relating to Politicks: That. the Ministry is never mentioned, nor the Word King, above twice or thrice; and then, only to the Honour of Majesty. So very cautious were our wifer Ancestors, in forming Rules for Conversation, as never to give Offence to crowned Heads, nor interfere with Party Disputes in the State. And indeed, although there feem to be a close Resemblance between the two Words, Politeness, and Politicks; yet no Ideas are more inconfiftent in their Natures. However, to avoid all Appearance of Difaffection, I have taken Care to enforce Loyalty, by an invincible Argument, drawn from the Fountain of this noble Science, in the following fhort Terms, that ought to be writ in Gold, Must, IS FOR THE KING. Which uncontroulable Maxim, I took particular Care of introducing in the first Page of my Book; thereby, to instil only the best Protestant loyal Notions into the Minds of my Readers. Neither is it meerly my own private Opinion, that Politeness is the firmest Foundation upon which Loyalty can be supported: For, thus happily fings the never-to-be-too-much-admired + Lord H —, in his truly fublime Poem, called, Loyalty defined.

Who's not polite, for the Pretender, is; A Jacobite, I know him by his Phizz,

^{*} This Word is spelt by Latinists Encyclopædia But, the judicious Author, wisely prefers the polite Reading before the Pedantick.

[†] It is erroneously printed in the London Edition, Mr. Stephen Duck.

244 INTRODUCTION.

In the like Manner, the divine Mr. Tibbalds, or Theobalds, in one of his Birth-day Poems.

I am no Scollard, but I am polite, Therefore be sure, I am no Jacobite.

HERE likewise, to the same Purpose, that great Master of the poetick Quire, our most illustrious Laureat, Mr. Colly Cibber.

Who in his Talk, can't speak a polite Thing, Will never loyal be, to George our King.

I COULD produce many more shining Passages out of our principal Poets of both Sexes, to confirm this momentous Truth. From whence, I think it may be fairly concluded, that whoever can most contribute towards propagating the Science contained in the following Sheets, through the Kingdoms of Great Britain and Ireland, may justly demand all the Favour that the wifest Court, and most judicious Senate, are able to confer, on the most deserving Subject. I leave the Applica-

tion to my Readers.

This is the Work, which I have been so hardy to attempt, and without the least mercenary View. Neither, do I doubt of succeeding, to my sull Wish, except among the Tories and their Abettors; who being all Jacobites, and consequently Papists in their Hearts, may perhaps, resolve not to read my Book; chusing, from a Want of true Taste, or by strong Affectation, rather to deny themselves the Pleasure and Honour of sharing in polite Company, among the principal Genius's of both Sexes throughout the Kingdom, than adorn their Minds with this noble Art; and probably apprehending

IF my favourable and gentle Readers could possibly conceive the perpetual Watchings, the numberless Toyls, the frequent Risings in the Night, to fet down feveral ingenious Sentences, that I fuddenly, or accidentally recollected; and which, without my utmost Vigilance, had been irrecoverably loft for ever: If they would confider, with what incredible Diligence, I daily, and nightly attended, at those Houses where Persons of both Sexes, and of the most distinguished Merit used to meet, and display their Talents: With what Attention I liftned to all their Discourses, the better to retain them in my Memory; and then, at proper Seasons withdrew unobserved, to enter them in my Table-Book, while the Company little suspected what a noble Work I had then in Embrio: I fay, if all this were known to the World, I think it would be no great Prefumption in me to expect at a proper Juncture, the publick Thanks of both Houses of Parliament, for the Service and Honour I have done to the whole Nation, by my fingle Pen.

ALTHOUGH I have never been once charged with the least Tincture of Vanity, the Reader will, I hope, give me Leave to put an easy Question. What is become of all the King of Sweden's Victories? Where are the Fruits of them at this Day? Or, of what Benefit will they be to Posterity? Were not many of his greatest Actions owing, at least, in Part, to Fortune? Were not all of them owing to the Valour of his Troops, as much as to his own Conduct? Could he have conquered the Polish King, or the Czar of Niuscowy, with his Vol. VI.

fingle Arm. Far be it from me, to envy or leffen the Fame he hath acquired: But, at the fame Time, I will venture to fay, without Breach of Modesty, that I, who have alone, with this Right Hand, subdued Barbarism, Rudeness, and Rusticity; who have established, and fixed for ever, the whole System of all true Politeness, and Resinement in Conversation; should think my self most inhumanly treated by my Countrymen, and would accordingly resent it as the highest Indignity, to be put upon the Level, in Point of Fame, in after Ages, with Charles XII. late King of Sweden.

AND yet, to incurable is the Love of Detraction. perhaps, beyond what the charitable Reader will eafily believe, that I have been affured by more than one credible Person, how some of my Enemies have industriously whispered about, that one Isaac Newton, an Instrument-Maker, formerly living near Leicester Fields, and afterwards a Workman in the Mint, at the Tower, might poffibly pretend to vye with me for Fame in future The Man, it feems, was knighted for Times. making Sun-Dyals better than others of his Trade. and was thought to be a Conjurer, because he knew how to draw Lines and Circles upon a Slate, which no Body could understand. But, adieu to all noble Attempts for endless Renown, if the Ghost of an obscure Mechanick, shall be raised up, to enter into Competition with me, only for his Skill in making Pot-hooks and Hangers, with a Pencil; which many thousand accomplished Gentlemen and Ladies can perform as well, with a Pen and Ink. upon a Piece of Paper, and in a Manner as little intelligible as those of Sir Isaac.

My most ingenious Friend already mentioned, Mr. Colly Cibber, who doth so much Honour to

the Laurel Crown he defervedly wears (as he hath often done to many Imperial Diadems placed on his Head) was pleased to tell me, that if my Treatise were shaped into a Comedy, the Representation performed to Advantage on our Theatre, might very much contribute to the spreading of Polite Conversation among all Persons of Distinction through the whole Kingdom. I own, the Thought was ingenious, and my Friend's Intention good: But, I cannot agree to his Proposal. For, Mr. Cibber himself, allowed, that the Subjects handled in my Work being fo numerous, and extensive, it would be absolutely impossible for one, two, or even fix Comedies to contain them. From whence it will follow, that many admirable and effential Rules for Polite Conversation must be omitted. And here, let me do Justice to my Friend Mr. Tibbalds, who plainly confessed before Mr. Cibber himself, that such a Project, as it would be a great Diminution to my Honour, so it would intolerably mangle my Scheme, and thereby destroy the principal End at which I aimed; to form a compleat Body, or System, of this most useful Science in all And therefore Mr. Tibbalds, whose Judgment was never disputed, chose rather to fall in with my Proposal mentioned before, of erecting publick Schools, and Seminaries, all over the Kingdom, to instruct the young People, of both Sexes, in this Art, according to my Rules, and in the Method that I have laid down.

I SHALL conclude this long, but necessary Introduction, with a Request, or, indeed, rather, a just and reasonable Demand from all Lords, Ladies, and Gentlemen, that, while they are entertaining and improving each other with those polite Questions, Answers, Repartees, Replies, and Rejoynders,

248 INTRODUCTION.

joynders, which I have, with infinite Labour, and close Application, during the Space of thirty six Years been collecting for their Service and Improvement, they shall, as an Instance of Gratitude, on every proper Occasion, quote my Name, after this, or the like Manner: Madam, as our Master Wagstaff says. My Lord, as our Friend Wagstaff hath it. I do likewise expect, that all my Pupils shall drink my Health every Day at Dinner and Supper, during my Life; and that they, or their Posterity, shall continue the same Ceremony, to my not inglorious Memory, after my Decease, for ever.



COLLECTION

Of genteel and

Ingenious Conversation,

ACCORDING

To the most polite Mode and Method, now used at Court, and in the best Companies of England.

In feveral Dialogues.



DUBLIN:

Printed by and for George FAULKNER.

M,DCC,XXXVIII.



The Men.

The Ladies.

Lord SPARKISH

Lord SMART

Sir John Linger

Mr. NEVEROUT

Colonel ATWIT

Lady SMART

Miss NOTABLE

Lady Answerall



The ARGUMENT.

Lord Sparkish and Colonel Atwit meet in the Morning upon the Mall; Mr. Neverout joins them; they all go to Breakfast at Lady Smart's. Their Conversation over their Tea: After which they part; but my Lord and the two Gentlemen are invited to Dinner. Sir John Linger invited likewise; and, comes a little too late. Their whole Conversation at Dinner: After which, the Ladies retire to their Tea. The Conversation of the Ladies without the Men; who are supposed to stay and drink a Bottle; but in some Time, go to the Ladies and drink Tea with them. The Conversation there. After which a Party at Quadrill until Three in the Morning; but no Conversation set down. They all take leave, and go Home.



ACOMPLEAT

COLLECTION

Of genteel and

Ingenious Conversation, & c.

St. James's-Park.

[Lord Sparkish meeting Colonel Atwit.]

Colonel.



ELL met, my Lord.

Lord Sp. Thank ye Colonel; a Parson would have said, I hope we shall meet in Heaven. When did you

ice Tom. Neverout ?

Col. He's just coming towards us. Talk of the Devil.

[Neverout comes up.]

Col. How do you do Tom?

Nev.

Nev. Never the better for you.

Col. I hope you're never the worse. But, where's your Manners? Don't you see my Lord Sparkish?

Nev. My Lord, I beg your Lordship's Pardon. Lord Sp. Tom, How is it? what, you can't see the Wood for Trees? What Wind blew you hither?

Nev. Why, my Lord, it is an ill Wind that blows no Body Good; for it gives me the Honour of feeing your Lordship.

Col. Tom, you must go with us to Lady Smart's

to Breakfast.

Nev. Must! why Colonel, Must is for the King.

[Colonel offering in jest to draw his Sword.]

Col. Have you spoke with all your Friends?

Nev. Colonel, as you are stout, be merciful.

Lord Sp. Come, agree, agree, the Law's costly.

[Colonel taking bis Hand from the Ilili.]

Nev. What, do you think I was born in a Wood to be fcar'd by an Owl?

Col. Well Tom, you are never the work Man

for being afraid of me. Come along.

Nev. I'll wait on you. I hope Miss Notable will be there. I gad the's very handiome, and has Wit at Will.

Col. Why; every one as they like; as the good Woman faid, when she kiss'd her Cow.

[Lord Smart's House. They knock at the Door; Porter comes out.]

Lord Sp. Pray are you the Porter? Port. Yes, for Want of a better,

Lord Sp. Is your Lady at home?

Port. She was at home just now, but she is not gone out yet.

Nev. I warrant this Rogue's Tongue is well hung.

[Lady Smart's Anti-Chamber.]

[Lady Smart, Lady Answerall, Miss Notable, at the Tea-Table.]

Lady Sm. My Lord, your Lordship's most humble Servant.

Lord Sp. Madam, you spoke too late, I was your Ladyship's before.

Lady Sm. O! Colonel, are you here? Col. As fure as you're there Madam.

Lady Sm. Oh, Mr. Neverout, what! fuch a Man alive!

Nev. Ay Madam, alive, and alive like to be, at

your Ladyship's Service.

Lady Sm. Well, I'll get a Knife, and nick it down, that Mr. Neverout came to our House. And, pray what News Mr. Neverout?

Nev. News; why Madam, Queen Elizabeth's

dead.

Lady Sm. Well, Mr. Neverout, I see you are no Changeling.

[Miss Notable comes in.]

Nev. Miss, your Slave; I hope your early Rising will do you no Harm: I find you are but just come out of the Cloth-Market.

Miss. I always rise at Eleven, whether it be Day

or no.

Col. Miss, I hope you're up for all Day.

Miss. Yes, if I don't get a Fall before Night.

Col.

Col. Miss, I heard you were out of Order. Pray how are you now?

Miss. Pretty well Colonel, I thank you.

Col. Pretty, and Well, Miss, that's two very good Things.

Miss. I mean, I am better than I was. Nev. Why, then 'tis well you were fick.

Miss. What, Mr. Neverout, you take me up, before I'm down.

Lord Sp. Come, let us leave off Children's Play, and go to Push-Pin.

Miss. [to Lady Smart] Pray Madam, give me

fome more Sugar to my Tea.

Col. Oh, Miss, you must needs be very good humoured, you love sweet Things so well.

Nev. Stir it up with the Spoon Miss, for the

deeper the fweeter.

Lady Sm. I affure you, Miss, the Colonel has made you a great Compliment.

Miss. I am forry for it; for I have heard 'em

fay, that Complimenting is lying.

Lady Sm. [to Lord Sparkish.] My Lord, methinks the Sight of you is good for fore Eyes: If we had known of your coming, we would have strown Rushes for you. How has your Lordship done this long Time?

Col. Faith Madam, he's better in Health than

good Condition.

Lord Sp. Well; I fee there's no worse Friend than one brings from Home with one; and I'm not the first Man that has carried a Rod to whip himself.

Nev. Here's poor Miss, has not a Word to throw at a Dog. Come, a Penny for your Thought.

Miss. It is not worth a Farthing; I was thinking of you. Col.

[Colonel rifing up.

Lady Sm. Colonel, where are you going fo foon? What, I hope you did not come to fetch Fire?

Col. Madam, I must needs go home for half an Hour.

Miss. Why, Colonel, they say the Devil's at

home.

Lady Answ. Well, but fit while you stay; 'tis as cheap sitting, as standing.

Col. No, Madam, while I'm standing, I'm

going.

Miss. Nay, let him go, I promise we won't tear his Cloaths to hold him.

Lady Sm. I suppose, Colonel, we keep you from better Company; I mean only, as to my self. Col. Madam, I'm all Obedience.

[Colonel fits down.]

Lady Sm. Lord, Miss, how can you drink your Tea so hot? Sure your Mouth is paved.

Lady Sm. How do you like this Tea Colonel? Col. Well enough, Madam, but methinks it is a little Morish.

Lady Sm. Oh, Colonel, I understand you, Betty bring the Canister. I have but very little of this Tea left; but, I don't love to make two Wants of one, want when I have it, and want when I have it nor. He, he, he, he. [Laughs.]

Lady Anfro. [To the Maid.] Why, fure Betty,

thou ar't bewitcht, this Cream is burnt too.

Lady Sm. Why, Madam, the Bishop has set his Foot in it.

Lady Sat. Go, run Girl, and warm some sresh Cream.

Betty. Indeed, Madam, there's none left, for the Cat has eaten it all.

Lady Sm. I doubt it was a Cat with two Legs.

Miss. Colonel, don't you love Bread and But-

ter with your Tea?

Col. Yes, in a Morning Miss. For they say Butter is Gold in a Morning, and Silver at Noon, but it is Lead at Night.

Miss. The Weather is so hot, that my Butter

melts on my Bread.

Lady Answ. Why, Butter I've heard 'em say, is mad twice a Year.

Lord Sp. [To the Maid.] Mrs. Betty, how does your Body politick?

Col. Fye, my Lord, you'll make Mrs. Betty

blush.

Lady Sm. Blush! Ay, blush like a blue Dog. Never. Pray, Mrs. Betty, are not you Tom Johnson's Daughter?

Betty. So my Mother tells me, Sir.

Lord Sp. But, Mrs. Betty, I hear you are in Love.

Betty. My Lord, I thank God, I hate no

Body, I am in Charity with all the World.

Lady Sm. Why, Wench, I think thy Tongue runs upon Wheels this Morning. How came you by that Scratch on your Nose? Have you been fighting with the Cats?

Col. [to Miss] Miss, when will you be mar-

ried?

Miss. One of these odd-come-shortlies, Colonel.

Nev. Yes, they fay the Match is half made; the Spark is willing, but Miss is not.

Mijs. I suppose the Gentleman has got his own

Consent for it.

Lady Answ. Pray my Lord, did you walk

through the Park in this Rain?

Lord Sp. Yes, Madam, we were neither Sugar, nor Salt, we were not afraid the Rain would melt us, He, he, he. [Laughs.]

Col. It rained, and the Sun shone at the same

Time.

Never. Why, then the Devil was beating his Wife behind the Door with a Shoulder of Mutton. [Here a loud Laugh.]

Col. A blind Man would be glad to fee that.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, methinks you stand in your own Light.

Never. Ah, Madam, I have done so all my

Life.

Lord Sp. I am fure he fits in mine: Prithee Tom, fit a little further, I believe your Father was no Glazier.

Lady Sin. Miss, dear Girl, fill me a Dish of Tea; for I'm very lazy.

[Miss fills a Dish of Tea, sweetens it, and then tastes it.]

Lad, Sm. What, Miss, will you be my Taster?

Mijs. No, Madam, but they fay, she's an ill Cook that can't lick her own Fingers.

Never. Pray, Miss, fill me another.

Miss. Will you have it now, or stay till you

get it?

Lady Anfw. But, Colonel, they fay, you went to Court latt Night very drunk: Nay, I am told for certain, you had been among the *Philistians*. No Wonder the Cat winked, when both her Eyes were out.

Col. Indeed, Madam, that's a Lye.

Lady Answ. Well, 'tis better I should lye, than you should lose your Manners. Besides, I don't lye, I sit.

Never. O faith, Colonel, you must own you had a Drop in your Eye; for when I left you,

you were half Seas over.

Lord Sp. Well, I fear Lady Answerall, can't live long, she has so much Wit.

Never. No, she can't live, that's certain; but she may linger thirty or forty Years.

Miss. Live long! Ay, longer than a Cat, or

a Dog, or a better Thing.

Lady Answ. Oh, Miss, you must give your Vardi too.

Lord Sp. Miss, shall I fill you another Dish of Tea?

Miss. Indeed, my Lord, I have drank enough. Lord Sp. Come, it will do you more Good than a Month's fasting. Here, take it.

Miss. No, I thank your Lordship, enough's

as good as a Feaft.

Lord Sp. Well, but if you always fay no, you'll never be married.

Lady Anjw. Do, my Lord, give her a Dish,

for they fay Maids will fay no, and take it.

Lord Sp. Well, and I dare fay, Miss is a Maid in Thought, Word, and Deed.

Never. I would not take my Oath of that.

Miss. Pray, Sir, speak for your felf.

Lady Sm. Fye, Miss: Maids, they say, should

be feen, and not heard.

Lady Answ. Good Miss, stir the Fire, that the Tea-Kettle may boyl. You have done it very well, now it burns purely. Well, Miss, you'll have a chearful Husband.

Miss

Miss. Indeed, your Ladyship could have stirred it much better.

Lady Anfw. I know that very well Huffy, but I won't keep a Dog, and bark my felf.

Never. What; you are fluck Mis?

Miss. Not at all, for her Ladyship meant you. Nev. O. faith Miss, you are in Lob's Pound,

get out as you can.

Miss. I won't quarrel with my Bread and Butter, for all that; I know when I'm well.

Lady Answ. Well, but Miss.

Nev. Ah, dear Madam, let the Matter fall; take Pity upon poor Miss; don't throw Water on a drounded Rat.

Miss. Indeed Mr. Neverout, you should be cut for the Simples this Morning. Say a Word more, and you had as good eat your Nails.

Lord Sp. Pray Miss, will you please to favour

us with a Song?

Miss. Indeed my Lord I can't; I have got a great Cold?

Col. Oh Miss, they say all good Singers have

Colds.

Lord Sp. Pray Madam, does not Miss sing very well?

Lady Answ. She fings, as one may fay; my Lord.

Miss. I hear Mr. Neverout has a very good Voice.

Col. Yes, Tom fings well; but his Luck's naught.

Nev. Faith, Colonel, there you hit yourfelf a

devilish Box of the Ear.

Col. Mis, will you take a Pinch of Snuff?

Miss. No, Colonel, you must know, I never take Snuff but when I'm angry.

Lady

Lady Answ. Yes, yes, she can take Snuff, but she has never a Box to put it in.

Miss. Pray Colonel let me see that Box? Col. Madam, there's never a C. upon it.

Miss. May be there is Colonel.

Col. Ay, but May-bees don't fly now Miss.

Nev. Colonel, why fo hard upon poor Miss? Don't set your Wit against a Child: Miss give me a Blow, and I'll beat him.

Miss. So she pray'd me to tell you.

Lord Sp. Pray, my Lady Smart, what Kin are you to Lord Pozz?

Lady Sm. Why, his Grandmother and mine had four Elbows.

Lady Answ. Well; methinks here's a filent Meeting. Come Miss, hold up your Head Girl, there's Money bid for you. [Miss starts.]

Miss. Lord, Madam, you frighten me out of my

feven Senses!

Lord Sp. Well, I must be going.

Lady Answ. I have seen hastier People than you stay all Night.

Col. [to Lady Smart.] Tom Neverout and I,

are to leap To-morrow for a Guinea.

Miss. I believe Colonel, Mr. Neverout can leap at a Crust better than you.

Nev. Mils, your Tongue runs before your Wit:

Nothing can tame you but a Husband.

Miss. Peace, I think I hear the Church Clock. Nev. Why, you know as the Fool thinks, the Bell chinks.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, your Handkerchief's fallen.

Miss. Let him set his Foot upon it, that it mayn't fly in his Face.

Nev. Well Mifs.

Vol. VI. T Miss.

Miss. Ay, ay, many a One says Well, that thinks Ill.

Nev. Well Mifs, I'll think of this.

Miss. That's Rhyme, if you take it in Time.

Nev. What! I fee you are a Poet.

Miss. Yes, if I had but Wit to shew it.

Nev. Miss, will you be so kind to fill me a Dish of Tea?

Miss. Pray let your Betters be served before you; I am just going to fill one for my self: And, you know the Parson always christens his own Child first.

Nev. But, I faw you fill one just now for the Colonel: Well, I find Kiffing goes by Favour.

Col. Ods fo, I have cut my Thumb with this curfed Knife.

Lady Answ. Ay, that was your Mother's Fault; because she only warned you not to cut your Fingers.

Lady Sm. No, no; 'tis only Fools cut their

Fingers, but wife Folks cut their Thumbs.

Miss. I'm forry for it, but I can't cry. But pray, Mr. Neverout, what Lady was that you were talking with in the Side-box last Tuesday?

Nev. Miss; can you keep a Secret?

Miss. Yes, I can.

Nev. Well Miss, and so can I.

Col. Don't you think Miss is grown?

Lady Answ. Ay, ay, ill Weeds grow a-pace. Miss. No, Madam, with Submission, 'tis Weeds of Grace that grow a-pace.

[A Puff of Smoak comes down the Chimney.]

Lady Answ. Lord Madam! does your Ladyship's Chimney smoak?

Col. No Madam, but they fay Smoak always purfues

pursues the Fair, and your Ladyship sat nearest.

Lady Sm. Madam, do you love Bohea Tea?

Lady Anfw. Why really Madam, I must con-

fefs, I do love it; but it does not love me.

Miss. [to Lady Smart.] Indeed Madam, your Ladyship is very sparing of your Tea; I protest, the last Dish I took, was no more than Water bewitcht.

Col. Pray Miss, if I may be so bold, what Lover gave you that fine Etuy?

Miss. Don't you know? then keep Council.

Lady Answ. I'll tell you Colonel who gave it her; it was the best Lover she will ever have while she lives; even her own dear Papa.

Nev. Methinks Miss, I don't much like the

Colour of that Ribband.

Miss. Why then, Mr. Neverout, if you don't

like it, dy'e fee, you may look off of it.

Lord Sp. I don't doubt Madam, but your Ladyship has heard that Sir John Bearish, has got an Employment at Court.

Lady Sm. Yes, yes, and I warrant he thinks

himself no small Fool now.

Nev. Yet, Madam, I have heard some People take him for a wise Man.

Lady Sm. Ay, fome are Wife, and fome are otherwife.

Lady Answ. Do you know him Mr. Neverout?

Nev. Know him; ay Madam as well as a Beg-

gar knows his Dish.

Col. Well, I can only fay he has better Luck than honester Folks: But, pray how came he to get this Employment?

Lord Sp. Why, by Chance, as the Man killed

the Devil.

Nev. Why Miss, you are in a brown Study.

T 2 What's

What's the Matter; methinks you look like Mum chance, that was hang'd for faying nothing.

Mijs. I'd have you to know I fcorn your Words, Nev. Well, ay but fcornful Dogs, they fay,

will eat dirty Puddings.

Miss. Well, my Comfort is, your Tongue's no flander. What, you would not have one be always upon the high Grin?

Nev. Cry Mapsticks, Madam, no Offence I

hope

[Lady Smart breaks a Tea-cup.]

Lady Answ. Lord, Madam, how came you to break your Cup?

Lady Sm. I can't help it, if I would cry my

Eyes out.

Mis. Why fell it, Madam, and buy a new one with some of the Money.

Col. Why, if Things do not break or wear out,

how should Tradesmen live?

Miss. Well, I'm very sick, if any Body cared for it. [She spits.] I believe I shall dye, for I can't fpit from me.

Nev. Come then, Miss, e'en make a Die of it;

and then we shall have a burying of our own.

Mis. The Devil take you, Neverout, besides all final! Curses.

Lady Anfo. Marry come up: What, plain Neverout, methinks you might have an M under

your Girdle, Miss.

Lady Sin. Well, well; naught's ne'er in Danger, I warrant, Miss will spit in her Hand and hold fast. Colonel, do you like this Bisket?

Col. I'm. like all Fools, I love every Thing

that's good.

Lady Sm. Well and isn't it pure good?

Col. 'Tis better than a worfe.

[Footman brings the Colonel a Letter.]

Lady Answ. I suppose, Colonel, that's a Billet-deaux from your Mistress.

Col. I'gad I don't know whence it comes, but whoever writ it, writes a Hand like a Foot.

Miss. Well you may make a Secret of it, but we can spell and put together.

Nev. Miss, what spells B double uzzard?
Miss. Buzzard in your Teeth, Mr. Neverout.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, now you are up, will you do me the Favour to do me the Kindness to take off the Tea-Kettle.

Lord Sp. I wonder what makes these Bells ring? Lady Answ. Why my Lord, I suppose because they pull the Ropes. [Here all laugh.]

[Neverout plays with a Tea-cup.]

Miss. Now a Child would have cryed half an Hour before he could have found out such a pretty Play-Thing.

Lady Sm. Well faid, Miss: I vow Mr. Never-

out, the Girl is too hard for you.

Nev. Ay, Miss will say any Thing but her

Prayers, and those she whistles.

Miss. Pray, Colonel, make me a Prefent of that pretty Knife.

Nev. Ay, Miss, catch him at that, and hang

him.

Col. Not for the World, dear Miss, it will cut Love.

Lord Sp. Colonel, you shall be married first, I was just going to say that.

Lady Sm. Well, but for all that, I can tell you who

who is a great Admirer of Miss: Pray, Miss, how do you like Mr. Spruce, I swear I have seen him often cast a Sheep's Eye out of a Calve's Head at you, deny it if you can.

Miss. O Madam, all the World knows, that

Mr. Spruce is a general Lover.

Col. Come, Miss, it is too true to make a Jest on. [Miss blushes.]

Lady Anfw. Well, however blufhing is fome Sign of Grace.

Nev. Miss says nothing, but I warrant she pays

it off with thinking.

Miss. Well, Ladies and Gentlemen, I find you are pleased to divert your selves; but as I hope to be saved there is nothing in it.

Lady Sm. Ah, Miss, Love will creep where it can't go: They say, touch a gall'd Horse, and

he'll wince.

Miss. I'd hold a hundred Pound Mr. Neverout was the Inventor of that Story; and, Colonel, I doubt you had a Finger in the Pye.

Lady Answ. But, Colonel, you forgot to falute Miss when you came in; she said, you had not

teen her a long Time.

Miss. Fye, Madam, I vow, Colonel, I said no such Thing; I wonder at your Ladyship.

Col. Mifs, I beg your Pardon.

[Goes to salute ber, she struggles a little.]

Miss. Well, I had rather give a Knave a Kiss for once, than be troubled with him: But, upon my Word, you are more bold than welcome.

Lady Sm. Fye, fye, Miss, for Shame of the

World, and Speech of good People.

[Neverout

[Neverout to Miss, who is cooking her Tea and Bread and Butter.]

Nev. Come, come, Miss, make much of naught, good Folks are scarce.

Miss. What, and you must come in with your two Eggs a Penny, and three of them rotten.

Col. [To Lord Sparkish.] But, my Lord, I forgot to ask you, how you like my new Cloaths?

Lord Sp. Why, very well, Colonel, only to deal plainly with you, methinks the worst Piece is in the Middle.

[Here a loud Laugh often repeated.]

Col. My Lord, you are too fevere on your Friends.

Miss. Mr. Neverout, I'm hot, are you a Sot? Nev. Miss, I'm cold, are you a Scold? Take you that.

Lady Sm. I confess that was home: I find, Mr. Neverout, you won't give your Head for the washing at they say

ing, as they fay.

Miss. O, he's a fore Man where the Skin's off: I fee Mr. Neverout has a Mind to sharpen the Edge of his Wit on the Whetstone of my Ignorance.

Lord Sp. Faith Tom, you are fluck; I never

heard a better Thing.

Nev. Pray, Miss, give me Leave to scratch you for that fine Speech.

Miss. Pox on your Picture, it cost me a Groat the drawing.

Nev. [To Lady Smart.] 'Sbuds, Madam, I have burnt my Hand with your plaguy Tea-Kettle.

Lady Sm. Why then, Mr. Neverout, you must fay, God save the King.

Nev. Did you ever fee the like?

Miss. Never but once at a Wedding.

Col. Miss, pray how old are you?

Miss. Why, I am as old as my Tongue, and a

little older than my Teeth.

Lord Sp. [To Lady Answerall.] Pray, Madam, is Miss Buxom marry'd? I hear it is all over the Town.

Lady Answ. My Lord, she's either marry'd, or

worfe.

Col. If the ben't marry'd, at least she's lustily promised. But is it certain that Sir John Blunderbuz is dead at last?

Lard Sp. Yes, or else he's fadly wrong'd; for

they have bury'd him.

Miss. Why, if he be dead, he'll eat no more Bread.

Col. But is he really dead?

Lady Anfw. Yes, Colonel, as fure as you're alive.

Col. They fay he was an honest Man. Lady Answ. Yes, with good looking to.

[Miss feels a Pimple on ber Face.]

Miss. Lord, I think my Goodness is coming out: Madam, will your Ladyship please to lend me a Patch?

Nev. Miss, if you are a Maid, put your Hand upon your Spot.

Miss. There, [covering ber whole Face with both

ber Hands.]

Lady Sm. Well, thou art a mad Girl. [Gives

ber a Tap.]

Miss. Lord, Madam, is that a Blow to give a Child?

[Lady

[Lady Smart lets fall ber Handkerchief, and the Colonel stoops for it.]

Lady Sm. Colonel, you shall have a better Office.

Col. Oh, Madam, I can't have a better than to

ferve your Ladyship.

Col. [To Lady Sparkish] Madam, has your Ladyship read the new Play written by a Lord, it is called, Love in a bollow Tree?

Lady Sp. No, Colonel.

Col. Why then, your Ladyship has a new Pleasure to come.

[Miss sighs]

Nev. Pray, Mifs, why do you figh?

Miss. To make a Fool ask, and you are the first. Nev. Why, Miss, I find there is nothing but a Word and a Blow with you.

Lady Answ. Why, you must know, Miss is in

Love.

Miss. I wish my Head may never ake till that Day.

Lord Sp. Come, Miss, never figh but fend for

him.

[Lady Smart, and Lady Answerall, speaking together.]

If he be hang'd, he'll come hopping, and if he be drown'd, he'll come dropping.

Miss. Well, I'll swear you'd make one dye with

laughing.

[Miss plays with a Tea-cup, and Neverout plays with another.]

Nev. Well, I see one Fool makes many. Miss. And you're the greatest Fool of any.

Nev. Pray, Mifs, will you be so kind to tye this String for me, with your fair Hands? It will

go all in your Day's work.

Miss. Marry come up indeed; tye it your self, you have as many Hands as I, your Man's Man will have a fine Office truly. Come, pray stand out of my spitting Place.

Nev. Well, but Miss, don't be angry.

Miss. No, I was never angry in my Life, but once, and then no Body cared for it; so, I resolved never to be angry again.

Nev. Well; but if you'll tye it, you shall ne-

ver know what I'll do for you.

Miss. So I suppose truly.

Nev. Well, but I'll make you a fine Present

one of these Days.

Mis. Ay, when the Devil is blind, and his Eyes are not fore yet.

Nev. No, Miss, I'll send it you To-morrow.

Miss. Well, well, To-morrow's a new Day: But I suppose, you mean To-morrow come never.

Nev. O, tis the prettieft Thing; I affure you there came but two of them over in three Ships.

Miss. Would I could see it, quoth blind Hugh: But, why did not you bring me a Present of Snuff this Morning?

Nev. Because, Miss, you never askt me; and

'tis an ill Dog that is not worth whiftling for.

Lord Sp. [to Lady Answerall.] Pray, Madam, how came your Ladyship last Thursday to go to that odious Puppet-Show?

Col. Why, to be fure her Ladyship went to see,

and to be feen.

Lady Anf. You have made a fine Speech, Colo-

nel; pray, what will you take for your Mouth-

piece?

Lord Sp. Take that, Colonel. But, pray Madam, was my Lady Dimple there? They fay she is extreamly handsome.

Lady Sm. They must not see with my Eyes that

think fo.

Nev. She may pass Muster, and that's all.

Lady Anf. Pray how old do you take her to be? Col. Why, about five or fix and twenty.

Miss. I swear she's no Chicken, she's on the

wrong Side of thirty, if she be a Day.

Lady Ans. Depend upon't, she'll never see five and thirty, and a Bit to spare.

Col. Why they fay, she's one of the chief Toasts

in Town.

Lady Sm. Ay, when all the rest are out of it.

Miss. Well; I would not be as sick, as she's

proud, for all the World.

Lady Ans. She looks as if Butter would not melt in her Mouth; but I warrant Cheese won't choak her.

Nev. I hear, my Lord, what d'ye call 'um is courting her.

Lord Sp. What Lord d'ye mean, Tom?

Miss. Why, my Lord, I suppose, Mr. Neverout means the Lord of the Lord knows what.

Col. They fay she dances very fine.

Lady Anf. She did; but I doubt her dancing Days are over.

Col. I can't pardon her for her rudeness to me.

Lady Sm. Well, but you must forget and for-

[Footman comes in.]

Lady Sm. Did you call Betty?

Footman. She's coming, Madam. Lady Sm. Coming? Ay so is Christmas.

[Betty comes in.]

Lady Sm. Come, get ready my Things, where has the Wench been these three Hours?

Betty. Madam, I can't go faster than my Legs

will carry me.

Lady Sm. Ay, thou hast a Head, and so has a Pin.—But, my Lord, all the Town has it, that Miss Caper is to be married to Sir Peter Gibeall. One Thing is certain, that she has promised to have him.

Lord Sp. Why, Madam, you know Promifes

are either broken or kept.

Lady Ans. I beg your Pardon, my Lord, Promises and Pye-Crusts, they say, are made to be broken.

Lady Sm. Nay, I had it from my Lady Carrilye's own Mouth; I tell my Tale, and my Tale's Author; if it be a Lye, you had it as cheap as I.

Lady Ans. She and I had some Words last Sunday at Church; but, I think I gave her her own.

Lady Sm. Her Tongue runs like the Clapper of a Mill; she talks enough for her self and all the Company.

Nev. And yet she simpers like a Furmity Kettle. Miss. [Looking in a Glass.] Lord, how my

Head is dreft to Day!

Col. O Madam, a good Face needs no Band.

Miss. No, and a bad one deserves none.

Col. Pray, Miss, where is your old Acquaintance Mrs. Wayward?

Miss. Why where should she be? If you must needs know; she's in her Skin.

Col.

Col. I can answer that: What if you were as

far out, as she's in?

Miss. Well, I promised to go this Evening to Hide-Park on the * Water; but, I protest, I'm half afraid.

Nev. Miss, Never fear: You have the old Proverb on your Side; naught's never in Danger.

Col. Why, Mifs, let Tom Neverout wait on you, and then I warrant you will be as fafe as a Thief in a Mill; for you know, he that is born to be hang'd, will never be drown'd.

Nev. Thank ye, Colonel, for your good Word; but faith, if ever I hang, it shall be about a fair

Lady's Neck.

Lady Sm. Who's there? Bid the Children be quiet, and not laugh fo loud.

Lady Anf. O, Madam, let 'em laugh; they'll

ne'er laugh younger.

Nev. Miss, I'll tell you a Secret, if you'll promise never to tell it again.

Miss. No, to be fure, I'll tell it to no Body

but Friends and Strangers.

Nev. Why then, here's fome Dirt in my Tea-Cup.

Miss. Come, come; the more there's in't, the

more there's on't.

Lady Anf. Poh, you must eat a Peck of Dirt before you dye.

Col. Ay, ay, it all goes one Way. Nev. Pray Miss, what's o' Clock?

Miss. Why, you must know 'tis a Thing like a Bell; and you're a Fool that can't tell.

^{*} A Cant Phrase for taking Pleasure on the River Thames in a Boat.

Nev. [to Lady Answ.] Pray Madam do you tell me, for I let my Watch run down.

Lady Answ. Why, 'tis half an Hour past Hang-

ing Time.

Col. Well; I am like the Butcher, that was looking for his Knife, and had it in his Mouth: I have been fearching my Pockets for my Snuff-Box, and, I gad, here it is in my Hand.

Miss. If it had been a Bear, 'twould have bit you, Colonel: Well, I wish I had such a Snuff-

Box.

Nev. You'll be long enough before you wish your Skin full of Eyelet-Holes.

Cel. Wish in one Hand ---

Miss. Out upon you; Lord, what can the Man mean?

Lord Sp. This Tea's very hot?

Lady Answ. Why, it came from a hot Place my Lord.

[Colonel spils bis Tea.]

Lady Sm. That's as well done, as if I had done it my felf.

Col. Madam, I find you live by ill Neighbours,

when you are forced to praise your felf.

Nev. Well; I won't drink a Drop more: If I

do, 'twill go down like chopt Hay.

Miss. Pray don't you say no 'till you are ask'd. Nev. Well; what you please, and the rest again.

Miss. [stooping for a Pin.] I have heard 'em say, a Pin a-Day, is a Groat a Year. Well, as I hope to be marryed (forgive me for Swearing) I vow it is a Needle.

Col. O the wonderful Works of Nature! that a black Hen should have a white Egg.

New.

Nev. What; you have found a Mare's Nest and laugh at the Eggs.

Miss. Pray keep your Breath to cool your Por-

ridge.

Nev. Miss there was a very pleasant Accident last Night in St. James's-Park.

Miss. [to Lady Smart.] What was it your La-

dyship was going to fay just now?

Nev. Why, if you won't hear my Tale, kiss my, &c.

Miss. Out upon you for a filthy Creater.

Nev. What, Miss; must I tell you a Story and find you Ears?

Lord Sp. [to Lady Smart.] Pray Madam, don't

you think Mrs. Spendal very genteel?

Lady Sm. Why, my Lord, I think she was cut out for a Gentlewoman, but she was spoiled in the making. She wears her Cloaths as if they were thrown on with a Pitch-Fork; and, for the Fashion, I believe they were made in the Days of Queen Bess.

Nev. Well, that's neither here nor there; for, you know the more careless, the more modish.

Col. Well, I'd hold a Wager there will be a Match between her and Dick Dolt; and I believe I can fee as far into a Millstone as another Man.

Miss. Colonel, I must beg your Pardon a thoufand Times, but they say, an old Ape has an old Eye.

Nev. Miss, what do you mean? you'll spoil

the Colonel's Marriage if you call him old.

Col. Not so old nor yet so cold—You know the rest Miss.

Miss. Manners is a fine Thing truly.

Col. Faith Miss, depend upon it, I'll give you as good as you bring. What? if you give a Jest, you must take a Jest.

Lady Sm. Well, Mr. Neverout, you'll never have done 'till you break that Knife, and then the

Man won't take it again.

Miss. Why Madam, Fools will be meddling; I wish he may cut his Fingers: I hope, you can see your own Blood without fainting?

Nev. Why, Miss you shine this Morning like a sh — Barn-Door; you'll never hold out at this Rate; pray save a little Wit for To-morrow.

Miss. Well, you have said your Say: If People will be rude, I have done. My Comfort is, it

will be all one a thousand Years hence.

Nev. Miss, and you have shot your Bolt: I find you must have the last Word: Well, I'll go to the Opera to Night.---No, I can't neither, for I have some Business — and yet I think I must; for I promised to squire the Countess to her Box.

Miss. The Countess of Puddledock I suppose.

Nev. Peace or War, Miss?

Lady Sm. Well, Mr. Neverout you'll never be mad, you are of fo many Minds.

[As Miss rises, the Chair falls behind ber.]

Miss. Well, I shan't be Lady Mayoress this Year.

Nev. No, Miss, 'tis worse than that, you won't be married this Year.

Miss. Lord! you make me laugh though I a'n't well.

[Neverout as Miss is standing pulls her suddenly on his Lap.]

Nev. Colonel, come sit down on my Lap; more Sacks on the Mill.

Miss. Let me go: An't you forry for my Heaviness?

Nev. No Miss; you are very light, but I don't say, You are a light Hussy. Pray take up the Chair for your Pains.

Miss. 'Tis but one Body's Labour, you may do it your self. I wish you would be quiet, you have more Tricks than a dancing Bear.

[Neverout rises to take up the Chair, and Miss sits in his.]

Nev. You would not be so soon in my Grave, Madam.

Miss. Lord, I have torn my Pettycoat with your odious romping; my Rents are coming in; I'm afraid I shall fall into the Ragman's Hands.

Nev. I'll mend it, Miss.

Miss. You mend it! Go teach your Grannum to fuck Eggs.

Nev. Why, Miss, you are so cross, I could

find in my Heart to hate you.

Miss. With all my Heart; I can assure you, there will be no Love lost between us.

Nev. But, pray my Lady Smart, does not Miss look as if she could eat me without Salt?

Miss. I'll make you one Day sup Sorrow for this.

Nev. Well, follow your own Way, you'll live the longer.

Miss. See, Madam, how well I have mended it.

Lady Sm. 'Tis indifferent, as Doll danc'd.

Nev. 'Twill last as many Nights as Days.

Vol. VI. U Miss

Miss. Well, I knew I should never have your

good Word.

Lady Sm. My Lord; Lady Answerall and I, were walking in the Park last Night till near Eleven; 'twas a very fine Night.

Nev. I'gad fo was I, and I'll tell you a comical

Accident. I'gad I loft my Understanding.

Miss. I'm glad you had any to lose.

Lady Sm. Well, but what do you mean?

Nev. I'gad I kickt my Feet against a Stone, and tore off the Heel of my Shoe, and was forced to limp to a Cobler in the Pellmell, to have it put on. He, he, he. [All laugh.]

Col. O, 'twas a delicate Night to run away with

another Man's Wife.

[Neverout fneezes.

Miss. God bless you, if you have not taken Snuff.

Nev. Why, what if I have, Miss?

Miss. Why then the Duce take you.

Nev. Miss, I want that Diamond Ring of yours.

Miss. Why then, Want's like to be your Master.

[Neverout looking at the Ring.]

Nev. Ay marry, this is not only, but also; pray, where did you get it?

Miss. Why, where it was to be had; where

the Devil got the Fryar.

Nev. Well, if I had fuch a fine Diamond Ring, I would not stay a Day in England But you know, far fetch'd and dear bought, is fit for Ladies. I warrant this cost your Father two Pence half Penny.

[Miss sitting between Neverout and the Colonel.]
Miss.

Miss. Well, here's a Rose between two Nettles-Nev. No, Madam, with Submission, there's a Nettle between two Roses.

[Colonel stretching himself.]

Lady Sm. Why, Colonel, you break the King's

Laws, you stretch without a Haltar.

Lady Answ. Colonel, some Ladies of your Acquaintance have promised to Breakfast with you, and I am to wait on them; what will you give us?

Col. Why, Faith Madam, Batchelor's Fare,

Bread and Cheefe, and Kiffes.

Lady Answ. Poh, what have you Batchelors to do with your Money, but to treat the Ladies? You have nothing to keep but your own four Quarters.

Lady Anfw. My Lord; has Captain Strut the

Honour to be related to your Lordship?

Lord Sp. Very nearly, Madam; he's my Coufin German quite removed.

Lady Answ. Pray is not he rich?

Lord Sp. Ay, a rich Rogue, two Shirts and a

Rag.

Col. Well; however they fay he has a great Estate, but only the right Owner keeps him out of it.

Lady Sm. What Religion is he of?

Lord Sp. Why; he is an Anythingarian.

Lady Answ. I believe, he has his Religion to chuse, my Lord.

[Neverout scratches his Neck.]

Miss. Fye, Mr. Neverout, an't you ashamed? I beg Pardon for the Expression; but I'm asraid your Bosom Friends are become your Backbiters.

U 2 Nev.

Nev. Well, Miss, I saw a Flea once on your Pinner; and a Loufe is a Man's Companion, but a Flea is a Dog's Companion. However, I wish you would feratch my Neck with your pretty white Hand.

Mis. And who would be Fool then? I would not touch a Man's Flesh for the Universe: You have the wrong Sow by the Ear; I affure you that's Meat for your Master.

Col Well, I must be plain, here's a very bad

Smell.

Miss. Perhaps, Colonel, the Fox is the finder. Nev. No, Colonel, 'tis only your Teeth against Rain. But,

Miss. Colonel, I find, you would make a very

good poor Man's Sow. But,

Nev. Mis Notable; all Quarrels laid afide,

pray step hither for a Moment.

Miss. I'll wash my Hands and wait on you, Sir; but pray come you hither, and try to open this Lock.

Nev. We'll try what we can do.

Miss. We! what, have you Pigs in your Belly?

Nev. I affure you, Miss, I am very handy at

all Things.

Miss. Marry hang them, that can't give themfelves a good Word, I believe you may have an even Hand to throw a Loufe into the Fire.

[Colonel coughing.]

Col. I have got a fad Cold.

Lady Answ. Ay, 'tis well if one can get any Thing these hard Times.

Miss. [To Colonel.] Choak Chicken, there's a-

nother a Hatching.

Lady Sm.

Lady Sm. Pray, Colonel, how did you get that Cold?

Lord Sp. Why, Madam, I suppose the Colonel

got it by lying a-Bed barefoot.

Lady Answ. Why, then Colonel, you must take it for better for worse, as a Man takes his Wife.

Col. Well, Ladies, I apprehend you without a Constable.

Miss. Mr. Neverout, Mr. Neverout, come hither this Moment.

Lady Sm. [imitating her.] Mr. Neverout, Mr. Neverout, I wish he were ty'd to your Girdle.

Nev. What's the Matter? Whose Mare's dead

now?

Miss. Take your Labour for your Pains, you may go back again like a Fool as you came.

Nev. Well, Miss, if you deceive me a second

Time, it's my Fault,

Lady Sm. Colonel, methinks your Coat is too short.

Col. It will be long enough, before I get another, Madam.

Miss. Come, come, the Coat's a good Coat, and come of good Friends.

Nev. Ladies, you are mistaken in the Stuff;

'tis half Silk.

Col. Tom Neverout, you're a Fool, and that's your Fault.

[A great Noise below.]

Lady Sm. Hey, what a clattering is there; one would think Hell was broke loofe.

Miss. Indeed, Madam, I must take my Leave, for I an't well.

Laily

Lady Sm. What, you are fick of the Mulli-

grubs with eating chopt Hay.

Miss. No indeed, Madam, to say the Truth of it, I'm sick and hungry, more need of a Cook than a Doctor.

Lady Ans. Poor Miss, she's sick as a Cushion,

The wants nothing but stuffing.

Col. If you are fick, you shall have a Caudle of Calves Eggs.

Nev. I can't find my Gloves.

Miss. I saw the Dog running away with some dirty Thing a while ago.

Col. Miss, you have got my Handkerchief;

pray let me have it.

Lady Sm. No, keep it Miss, for they say Posfession is eleven Points of the Law.

Miss. Madam, he shall never have it again; it is in Hucksters Hands.

Lady Anfav. What; I fee 'tis raining again.

Lord Sp. Why then, Madam, we must do as they do in Spain.

Lady Sm. Pray, my Lord, how is that? Lord Sp. Why, Madam, we must let it rain.

[Miss whispers Lady Smart.]

Nev. Miss, there's no whispering but there's lying.

Miss. Lord! Mr. Neverout, you are grown as

pert as a Pearmonger this Morning.

Nev. Indeed, Miss, you are very handsome. Miss. Poh, I know that already, tell me News.

[Some Body knocks at the Door.]

[Footman comes in.]

Footman.

Footman. [to Col.] An please your Honour, there's a Man below wants to speak to you.

Col. Ladies, your Pardon for a Minute.

[Colonel goes out.]

Lady Sm. Miss, I fent Yesterday to know how

you did, but you were gone abroad early.

Miss. Why, Madam, I was huncht up in a Hackney Coach with three Country Acquaintance, who called upon me to take the Air as far as High-pate.

Lady Sm. And had you a pleafant Airing?

Miss. No, Madam, it rain'd all the Time: I was jolted to Death, and the Road was so bad, that I screamed every Moment, and call'd to the Coachman, pray Friend don't spill us.

Nev. So, Miss, you were afraid that Pride

should have a Fall.

Miss. Mr. Neverout, when I want a Fool, I'll fend for you.

Lord Sp. Miss, did not your lest Ear burn last

Night?

Miss. Pray why, my Lord?

Lord Sp. Because I was then in some Company, where you were extolled to the Skies, I affure you.

Miss. My Lord, that was more their Goodness, than my Defert.

Lord Sp. They faid you were a compleat Beauty.

Miss. My Lord, I am as God made me.

Lady Sm. The Girl's well enough if the had but another Nofe.

Miss. O, Madam, I know I shall always have your good Word; you love to help a lame Dog over the Style.

1 Ons

[One knocks.]

Lady Sm. Who's there? You're on the wrong Side of the Door; come in if you be fat.

[Colonel comes in again.]

Lord Sp. Why, Colonel, you are a Man of great Business.

Col. Ay, my Lord; I'm like my Lord Mayor's

Fool; full of Business, and nothing to do.

Lady Sm. My Lord, don't you think the Colonel's mightily fallen away of late?

Lord Sp. Ay, fallen from a Horse Load to a

Cart-Load.

Col. Why, my Lord, I'gad I am like a Rabbit, fat and lean in four and twenty Hours.

Lady Sm. I affure you, the Colonel walks as

strait as a Pin.

Miss. Yes, he's a handsome bodied Man in the Face.

Nev. A handsome Foot and Leg, God-a-Mercy Shoe and Stocking.

Col. What? three upon one, that's foul play.

This would make a Parson swear.

Nev. Why Miss; what's the Matter? You look as if you had neither won nor lost.

Col. Why, you must know, Miss lives upon

Love.

Miss. Yes, upon Love and Lumps of the Cup-

Lady Anf. Ay, they fay Love and Peafe-porridge are two dangerous Things; one breaks the Heart, and t'other the Belly.

[Miss init ing Lady Answerall's Tone.]

Miss. Very pretty, one breaks the Heart, and t'other the Belly.

Lady Ans. Have a Care, Miss, they say mock-

ing is catching.

Miss. I never heard that.

Nev. Why then, Miss, you have one wrinkle more than ever you had before.

Miss. Well; live and learn.

Nev. Ay, and be hang'd, and forget all.

Miss. Well, Mr. Neverout, take it as you please; but I swear, you're a sawcy Jack for using such Expressions.

Nev. Why then, Miss, if you go to that, I must tell you, that there's never a Jack, but there's a Jill.

Miss. O, Mr. Neverout, every one knows that you are the Pink of Courtesy.

Nev. And, Miss, all the World allows that you

are the Flower of Civility.

Lady Sm. Miss, I hear there was a great deal of Company where you visited last Night: Pray who were they?

Miss. Why, there was Lady Forward, Miss Toandagain, Sir John Ogle, my Lady Clapper; and I, quoth the Dog.

Col. Was your Visit long, Miss?

Miss. Why truly, they went all to the Opera, and so poor Pillgarlick came home alone.

Nev. Alack a Day, poor Mis, methinks it

grieves me to pity you.

Miss. What, you think you faid a fine Thing now; well, if I had a Dog with no more Wit, I: would hang him.

Lady Sm. Miss, if it be Manners, may I ask

which is oldest, you, or Lady Scuttle?

Miss. Why, my Lord, when I dye for Age, the may quake for Fear.

Lady

Lady Sm. She's a very great Gadder abroad.

Lady Sm. Lord! she made me follow her last Week through all the Shops like a Tantiny Pig.

Lady Sm. I remember you told me, you had

been with her from Dan to Bersbeba.

Miss. O, Mr. Neverout, my little Countess has just littered; speak me fair, and I'll set you down for a Puppy.

Nev. Why Miss, if I speak you fair, perhaps I

mayn't tell Truth.

Lord Sp. Ay, but Tom, smoak that, she calls you Puppy by Crast.

Nev. Well, Miss, you ride the fore Horse To-

Day.

Miss. Ay, many a one says well, that thinks ill. Nev. Fye, Miss, you said that once before; and you know, too much of one Thing is good for nothing.

Miss. Why fure, one can't say a good Thing

too often.

Lord Sp. Well; fo much for that, and Butter for Fish. Let us call another Cause. Pray, Madam, does your Ladyship know Mrs. Nice?

Lady Sm. Perfectly well, my Lord; the is nice

by Name, and nice by Nature.

Lord Sp. Is it possible that she could take that

Booby Tom Blunder for Love?

Miss. She had good Skill in Horse Flesh, that could chuse a Goose to ride on.

Lady Answ. Why, my Lord, it was her Fate; they say Marriage and hanging go by Destiny.

Col. I believe, she'll never be burnt for a Witch.

Lord Sp. They say Marriages are made in Heaven; but I doubt when she was marry'd she had no Friends there.

Nev. Well, she's got out of God's Bleffing into the warm Sun.

Col. The Fellow's well enough, if he had any Guts in his Brains.

Lady Sm. They fay, thereby hangs a Tale.

Lord Sp. Why, he's a meer Hobbledehoy, neither Man nor Boy.

Miss. Well, if I were to chuse a Husband, I

would never be marry'd to a little Man.

Nev. Pray why fo, Miss? For they say of all Evils we ought to chuse the least.

Miss. Because Folks would say, when they saw us together; there goes the Woman and her Husband.

Col. [To Lady Smart.] Will your Ladyship be

on the Mall To-morrow Night?

Lady Sm. No, that won't be proper; you know To-morrow is Sunday.

Lord Sp. What then, Madam, they say, the bet-

ter Day the better Deed.

Lady Ans. Pray, Mr. Neverout, how do you like my Lady Fruzz?

Nev. Pox on her, she's as old as Pole's.

Miss. So will you be, if you ben't hang'd when you're young.

Nev. Come, Miss, let us be Friends; will you

go to the Park this Evening?

Miss. With all my Heart, and a Piece of my

Liver; but not with you.

Lady Sm. I'll tell you one Thing, and that's not two: I'm afraid I shall get a Fit of the Head-ack To-day.

Col. O, Madam, don't be afraid, it comes with

a Fright.

Miss. [To Lady Answerall.] Madam, one of your Ladyship's Lappets is longer than t'other.

Lady

Lady Anf. Well, no Matter; they that ride on

a trotting Horse will ne'er perceive it.

Nev. Indeed, Miss, your Lappets hang worse, Miss. Well, I love a Lyar in my Heart, and you fit me to a Hair.

[Miss rises up.]

Nev. Duce take you, Miss, you trod on my Foot, I hope you don't intend to come to my Bed-Side.

Miss. In troth, you are afraid of your Friends,

and none of them near you.

Lord Sp. Well faid, Girl, [giving ber a Chuck.] take that, they fay a Chuck under the Chin is worth two Kiffes.

Lady Answ. But, Mr. Neverout, I wonder why fuch a handsome strait young Gentleman as you, does not get some rich Widow.

Lord Sp. Strait! ay, strait as my Leg, and

that's crooked at Knee.

Nev. Faith, Madam, if it rain'd rich Widows, none of them would fall upon me. I'gad I was born under a three Penny Planet, never to be worth a Groat.

Lady Anfw. No, Mr. Neverout, I believe you were born with a Cawl on your Head; you are fuch a Favourite among the Ladies. But, what think you of Widow Prim? She's immensly rich.

Nev. Hang her, they fay her Father was a

Baker.

Lady Sm. Ay, but it is not what is she, but

what has she now a-Days.

Col. Tom, Faith put on a bold Face for once, and have at the Widow. I'll speak a good Word for you to her.

Lady

Lady Ans. Ay, I warrant you'll speak one Word for him, and two for your self.

Miss. Well, I had that just at my Tongue's End. Lady Answ. Why, Miss, they say good Wits

jump.

Nev. Faith, Madam, I had rather marry a Woman I loved, in her Smock, than Widow Prim, if she had her Weight in Gold.

Lady Sm. Come, come, Mr. Neverout, Marriage is honourable; but, Housekeeping is a Shrew.

Lady Answ. Consider, Mr. Neverout, four bare Legs in a Bed; and you are a younger Brother.

Col. Well, Madam, the younger Brother is the better Gentleman. However, Tom, I would advise you to look before you leap.

Lord Sp. The Colonel fays true: Besides, you can't expect to wive and thrive in the same Year.

Miss. [Shuddering.] Lord, there's some Body

walking over my Grave.

Col. Pray, Lady Answerall, where was you last Wednesday, when I did my self the Honour to wait on you? I think your Ladyship is one of the Tribe of Gad.

Lady Anjw. Why, Colonel; I was at Church. Col. Nay, then I will be hang'd, and my Horse too.

Nev. I believe her Ladyship was at a Church, with a Chimney in it.

.Miss. Lord! my Pettycoat, how it hangs by

Johnmetry.

New. Perhaps, the Fault may be in your Shape.

Miss. [Looking gravely.] Come, Mr. Neverout, there's no Jest like a true Jest: But, I suppose, you think my Back's broad enough to bear every Thing.

Nev. Madam; I humbly beg your Pardon.

Miss. Well, Sir, your Pardon's granted.

Nev. Well, all Things have an End, and a Pudden has two, up up on, my my Word. [Stutters.]

Miss. What; Mr. Neverout, can't you speak

without a Spoon?

Lady Sp. [To Lady Smart.] Has your Ladyship

feen the Dutchess since your Falling-out?

Lady Sm. Never, my Lord, but once at a a Visit; and she look'd at me, as the Devil look'd over Lincoln.

Nev. Pray Miss, take a Pinch of my Snuff.

Miss. What; you break my Head, and give me a Plaister; well, with all my Heart; once and not use it.

Nev. Well, Miss, if you wanted me and your

Victuals, you'd want your two best Friends.

Col. [To Neverout.] Tom, Miss and you must kiss and be Friends.

[Neverout falutes Miss.]

Miss. Any Thing for a quiet Life. My Nose itch'd, and I knew I should drink Wine, or kiss a Fool.

Col. Well, Tom, if that ben't fair, hang fair. Nev. I never faid a rude Thing to a Lady in

my Life.

Miss. Here's a Pin for that Lye. I'm fore Lyars had need of good Memories. Pray, Colonel, was not he very uncivil to me but just now?

Lady Anfw. Mr. Neverout, if Miss will be angry for nothing, take my Council, and bid her turn the Buckle of her Girdle behind her.

Nev. Come, Lady Answerall, I know better Things, Miss and I are good Friends: Don't put Tricks upon Travellers.

Col.

Col. Tom, not a Word of the Pudden, I beg you.

Lady Sm. Ah, Colonel, you'll never be good,

nor then neither.

Lord Sp. Which of the Goods d'ye mean? Good for something, or good for nothing.

Miss. I have a Blifter on my Tongue; yet I

don't remember I told a Lye.

Lady Ans. I thought you did just now.

Lord Sp. Pray, Madam, what did thought do? Lady Answ. Well, for my Life I cannot conceive what your Lordship means.

Lord Sp. Indeed, Madam, I mean no Harm. Lady Sm. No to be fure, my Lord, you are as

innocent as a Devil of two Year old.

Nev. Madam, they fay, ill Doers, are ill Deemers; but I don't apply it to your Ladyship.

[Miss mending a Hole in her Lace.]

Miss. Well, you see I'm mending; I hope, I shall be good in Time. Look, Lady Answerall, is it not well mended?

Lady Ans. Ay, this is something like a Tanzy. Lady Sm. Pray Colonel, are you not very much tann'd?

Col. Yes, Madam, but a Cup of Christmas

Ale, will foon wash it off.

Lord Sp. Lady Smart, does not your Ladyship think Mrs. Fade, is mightily altered since her Mar-

riage?

Lady Answ. Why, my Lord, she was handfome in her Time; but, she can't eat her Cake and have her Cake. I hear she's grown a mere Otomy.

Lady

Lady Anfw. Poor Creature, the black Ox has fet his Foot upon her already.

Miss. Ay, she has quite lost the Blue on the

Plum.

Lady Sm. And yet, they say he is very fond of her still.

Lady Answ. O Madam! if she would eat Gold.

he would give it her.

* Nev. [To Lady Smart.] Madam, have you heard that Lady Queasy, was lately at the Play-House in Cog?

Lady Sm. What Lady Queafy, of all Women

in the World! Do you fay it upon Rep?

Nev. Pozz; I saw her with my own Eyes; she sat among the Mobb in the Gallery, her own ugly Fizz. And she saw me look at her.

Col. Her Ladyship was plaguily bamb'd; I

warrant it put her into the Hipps.

Nev. I smoakt her huge Nose; and I'gad, she put me in Mind of the Woodcock, that strives to hide his long Bill, and then thinks no Body sees him.

Col. Tom, I advise you to hold your Tongue; for you'll never say so good a Thing again.

Lady Sm. Miss, what are you looking for?

Miss. O! Madam, I have lost the finest Needle.

Lady Answ. Why, seek 'till you find it, and

you won't lose your Labour.

Nev. The Loop of my Hat is broke. How shall I mend it? [He fastens it with a Pin.] well, hang them, say I, that have no Shift.

Miss. Ay, and hang them that has one too many. Miss. Well, but I don't like such Jesting.

^{*} Here the Author, for Variety, runs into some Cant Words.

Nev. Oh Miss! I have heard a fad Story of you.

Miss. I defy you, Mr. Neverout; no Body can fay, black's my Eye.

Nev. I believe you would wish they could.

Miss. Well, but who was your Author? Come, tell Truth for once, and shame the Devil.

Nev. Come, then Miss; guess who it was that told me; come, put on your considering Cap.

Miss. Well, who was it?

Nev. Why, one that lives within a Mile of an Oak.

Miss. Well; go hang yourself in your own Garter; for I'm sure the Gallows groans for you.

Nev. Bite! Miss, I was but in Jest.

Miss. Well, but don't let that stick in your Giz-

Col. [To Lord Smart.] My Lord, does your

Lordship know Mrs. Talkall?

Lord Sm. Only by Sight: But, I hear she has a great deal of Wit; and I'gad, as the Saying is, Mettle to the Back-Bone.

Lady Sm. So I hear.

Col. Why; Dick Lubber, said to her t'other Day; Madam; you can't cry Bo to a Goose: Yes; but I can said she; and I'gad cry'd Bo sull in his Face. We all thought we should break our Hearts with laughing.

Lord Sp. That was cutting with a Vengeance:

And, prithee how did the Fool look?

Col. Look: I'gad, he look'd for all the World, like an Owl in an Ivy Bush.

[Child comes in screaming.]

Miss. Well, if that Child was mine, I'd whip it 'till the Blood came. Peace you little Vixen; if were near you, I wou'd not be far from you.

Vol. VI. X Lady Sm.

Lady Sm. Ay, ay, Batchelor's Wives, and

Maid's Children, are finely tutor'd.

Lady Answ. Come to me Master, and I'll give you a Sugar-Plum: Why Miss, you forget that ever you was a Child yourself.

[She gives the Child a Lump of Sugar.]

I have heard 'em fay Boys will long.

Cel. My Lord, I suppose you know, that Mr. Buzzard has married again.

Lady Sm. This is his fourth Wife; then he has

been shod round.

Col. Why, you must know, she had a Month's Mind to Dick Frontless, and thought to run away with him; but, her Parents forced her to take the the old Fellow, for a good Settlement.

Lord Sp. So the Man got his Mare again.

Lady Sm. I'm told he said a very good Thing to Dick; said he, you think us old Fellows are Fools. But we old Fellows know young Fellows are Fools.

Col. I know nothing of that; but I know, he's devilish Old, and she's very Young.

Lady Answ. Why, they call that a Match of

the World's making.

Miss. What, if he had been Young, and she Old?

Nev. Why, Mifs, that would have been a Match of the Devil's making: But, when both are Young, that's a Match of God's making.

[Miss searching her Pocket for a Thimble, brings out a Nutmeg.]

Nev. O Miss! have a Care; for if you carry a Nutmeg in your Pocket, you'll certainly be married to an old Man.

Miss. Well, and if ever I be married, it shall be to an old Man; they always make the best Husbands: And it is better to be an old Man's Darling, than a young Man's Warling.

Nev. Faith, Miss, if you speak, as you think,

I'll give you my Mother for a Maid.

[Lady Smart rings the Bell.]

[Footman comes in.]

Lady Sm. Harkee, you Fellow, run to my Lady Match; and defire the will remember to be here at Six to play at Quadrille, d'ye hear, if you fall by the Way, don't stay to get up again.

Footman. Madam, I don't know the House.

Lady Sm. Well, that's not for Want of Ignorance, follow your Nose. Go enquire among the Servants.

[Footman goes out, and leaves the Door open.]

Lady Sm. Here, come back you Fellow, why did you leave the Door open: Remember, that a good Servant must always come, when he's call'd, do what he's bid, and shut the Door after him.

[The Footman goes out again, and falls down Stairs.]

Lady Answ. Neck, or nothing. Come down, or I'll fetch you down: Well, but I hope the poor Fellow has not saved the Hangman a Labour.

Nev. Pray, Madam, smoak Miss yonder biting

her Lips, and playing with her Fan.

Miss. Who's that takes my Name in vain?

[She runs up to them, and falls down.]

Lady

Lady Sm. What, more falling? Do you intend the Frolick should go round?

Lady Ans. Why, Miss, I wish you may not

have broke her Ladyship's Floor.

Nev. Miss, come to me, and I'll take you up.

Lord Sp. Well, but without a Jest, I hope,
Miss, you are not hurt.

Col. Nay, the must be hurt for certain; for you

fee her Head is all of a Lump.

Miss. Well; remember this, Colonel, when I

have Money, and you have none.

Lady Sm. But, Colonel, when do you defign to get a House, and a Wise, and a Fire to put her in?

Miss. Lord! who would be marryed to a Sol-

dier, and carry his Knap-Sack.

Nev. O, Madam, Mars and Venus, you know. Col. I'gad, Madam, I'd marry To-morrow, if I thought I could bury my Wife just when the Honey Moon is over; but they say, a Woman has as many Lives as a Cat.

Lady Anfw. I find, the Colonel thinks a dead Wife under the Table, is the best Goods in a Man's

House.

Lady Sm. O, but Colonel, if you had a good Wife, it would break your Heart to part with her. Col. Yes, Madam, for they fay, he that has

loft his Wife and Sixpence, has loft a Tefter.

Lady Sm. But, Colonel, they fay, that every marryed Man should believe there is but one good Wife in the World, and that's his own.

Col. For all that, I doubt, a good Wife must

be bespoke; for there is none ready made.

Mis. I suppose, the Gentleman's a Woman Hater; but, Sir, I think you ought to remember that once you had a Mother. And, pray, if it had

had not been for a Woman, where would you have been, Colonel?

Col. Nay, Miss, you cry'd Whore first, when

you talk'd of the Knap-Sack.

Lady Answ. But, I hope, you won't blame the whole Sex, because some are bad.

Nev. And, they fay, he that hates Women,

fuck'd a Sow.

Col. O, Madam, there's no general Rule with-

Lady Sm. Then, why don't you marry and,

settle.

Col. I'gad, Madam, there's nothing will fettle

me but a Bullet.

Miss. I suppose, the Colonel was cross'd in his first Love; which makes him so severe on all the Sex.

Lady Anf. Yes, and I'll hold an hundred to one, that the Colonel has been over Head and Ears in, Love with some Lady that has made his Heart ach.

Col. O, Madam, we Soldiers are Admirers of .

all the fair Sex.

Miss. I wish I could see the Colonel in love, 'till he was ready to dye.

Lady Sm. Ay, but I doubt, few People dye for

Love in these Days.

Nev. Well, I confess, I differ from the Colonel, for I hope to have a rich, and a handsome Wite: yet, before I dye.

Col. Ay, Tom, live Horse, and thou shalt have

Grafs.

Miss. Well, Colonel, but whatever you say against Women, they are better Creatures than Men; for Men were made of Clay, but Woman was made of Man, Col. Miss, you may say what you please; but saith, you'll never lead Apes in Hell.

Nev. No, no, I'll be fworn, Miss has not an

Inch of Nun's Flesh about her.

Miss. I understumble you, Gentlemen. Nev. Madam, your humblecumdumble.

Lord Sp. Pray, Miss, when did you see your old Acquaintance Mrs. Cloudy? You and she are two, I hear.

Miss. See her: Marry I don't Care whether I

ever fee her again, God bless my Eye-Sight.

Lady Ans. Lord; why she and you were as great as two Inkle-Weavers. I am sure, I have seen her hug you, as the Devil hugg'd the Witch.

Miss. That's true; but I'm told for certain,

the's no better than the should be.

Lady Sm. Well; God mend us all; but you must allow, the World is very censorious. I never heard that she was naughty.

Col. [To Neverout.] Come, Sir Thomas, when the King pleases, when do you intend to march?

Lord Sp. Have Patience; Tom, is your Friend

Ned Rattle marryed?

Nev. Yes, Faith, my Lord; he has tyed a Knot with his Tongue, that he can never untye with his Teeth.

Lady Sm. Ay, marry in haste, and repent at leifure.

Lady Answ. Has he got a good Fortune with his Lady? For, they say, something has some savour, but nothing has no flavour.

Nev. Faith, Madam, all he gets by her, he may put into his Eye, and fee never the worse.

Miss. Then, I believe, he heartily wishes her in Abraham's Bosom.

Col.

Col. Pray, my Lord, how does Charles Limber, and his fine Wife agree?

Lord Sp. Why, they fay, he's the greatest

Cuckold in Town.

Nev. O but, my Lord, you should always except my Lord Mayor.

Miss. Mr. Neverout.

Nev. Hay, Madam, did you call me?

Miss. Hay! Why; Hay is for Horses. Nev. Why, Miss, than you may ——

Col. Pray, my Lord, what's a Clock by your Oracle?

Lord Sp. Faith, I can't tell; I think my Watch

runs upon Wheels.

Nev. Miss, pray be so kind to call a Servant to bring me a Glass of Small-Beer. I know you are at Home here.

Miss. Every Fool can do as they're bid. Make a Page of your own Age, and do it yourself.

Nev. Chuse proud Fool; I did but ask you.

[Miss puts ber Hand to ber Knee.]

What, Miss, are you thinking of your Sweetheart?

Is your Garter flipping down?

Miss. Pray, Mr. Neverout, keep your Breath to cool your Porridge. You measure my Corn by your Bushel.

Nev. Indeed, Miss, you Lye -

Miss. Did you ever hear any Thing so rude.

Nev. I mean, you lye ____ under a Mistake.

Miss. If a thousand Lyes could choak you, you would have been choaked many a Day ago.

[Miss tries to snatch Mr. Neverout's Snuff-Box.]

Nev. Madam, you mis'd that, as you mis'd your Mother's Bleffing.

[She tries again, and misses.]

Nev. Snap short makes you look so lean, Miss. Miss. Poh; you are so robustious: You had like to put out my Eye: I assure you, if you blind me, you must lead me.

Lady Sm. Dear Miss, be quiet; and bring me

a Pin-Cushion out of that Closet.

[Miss opens the Door, and squals.]

Lady Sm. Lord bless the Girl, what's the Matter now?

Miss. I vow, Madam, I saw something in

black, I thought it was a Spirit.

Col. Why, Miss, did you ever see a Spirit?

Miss. No, Sir, I thank God, I never saw any

Thing worse than my self.

Nev. Well, I did a very foolish Thing Yester-day, and was a great Puppy for my Pains.

Miss. Very likely; for they say, many a true Word spoken in Jest.

[Footman returns.]

Lady Sm. Well, did you deliver your Message? You are fit to be sent for Sorrow, you stay so long by the Way.

Footman. Madam, my Lady was not at home;

fe, I did not leave the Meffage.

Lady Sm. This it is to fend a Fool of an Errand.

[Lord Sparkish looking at his Watch.]

Lord Sp. 'Tis pail twelve a Clock.

Lady Sm. Well, what is that among us all?

Lord Sp. Midam, I must take my Leave.

Lady Sm. Well, but your Lordship, and the Colonel,

Colonel, will dine with us To-Day; and Mr. Neverout, I hope, we shall have your good Company. There will be no Soul else, besides my own Lord, and these Ladies. For every Body knows, I hate a Crowd: I would rather want Vittels, than Elbow Room. We dine punctually at three.

Lord Sp. Madam, we'll be fure to attend your

Ladyship.

Col. Madam, my Stomach ferves me instead of a Clock.

[Another Footman comes back.]

Lady Sm. O, you are the other Fellow I fent: Well, have you been with my Lady Club. You are good to fend of a dead Man's Errand.

Footman. Madam, my Lady Club begs your Ladyship's Pardon; but she is engaged To-Night.

Miss. Well, Mr. Neverout; here's the Back of my Hand to you.

Nev. Miss, I find you will have the last Word.

Ladies, I am more yours than my own.





Second Conversation.

[Lord Smart, and the former Company at three a Clock, coming to dine.]

[After Salutations.]

Lord Sm.



'M forry I was not at home this Morning, when you all did us the Honour to call here. But I went to the Levee To-Day.

Lord Sp. O, my Lord; I'm fure the Lofs was ours.

Lady Sm. Gentlemen, and Ladies, you are come into a fad dirty House, I am forry for it, but we have had our Hands in Mortar.

Lord Sp. O, Madam, your Ladyship is pleased to say so, but I never saw any Thing so clean and so fine. I profess it is a persect Paradise.

Lady Sm. My Lord, your Lordship is always

very obliging.

Lord Sp. Pray, Madam, whose Picture is that? Lady Sm. Why, my Lord, it was drawn for me.

Lord

Lord Sp. I'll swear, the Painter did not flatter your Ladyship.

Col. My Lord, the Day is finely cleared up.

Lord Sm. Ay, Colonel, 'tis a Pity that fair Weather should ever do any harm. [to Neverout.] Why, Tom, you are high in the Mode.

Nev. My Lord, it is better to be out of the

World, than out of the Fashion.

Lord Sm. But, Tom, I hear, you and Miss, are always quarelling: I fear, it is your Fault, for I can affure you, she is very good humoured.

Nev. Ay, my Lord, so is the Devil when he's

pleas'd.

Lord Sm. Miss, what do you think of my

Friend Tom?

Miss. My Lord, I think he is not the wisest Man in the World; and truly, he's sometimes very rude.

Lord Sp. That may be true; but yet, he that hangs Tom for a Fool, may find a Knave in the

Halter.

Miss. Well, however, I wish he were hang'd,

if it were only to try.

Nev. Well, Miss, if I must be hanged, I won't go far to chuse my Gallows: It shall be about your fair Neck.

Miss. I'll see your Nose Cheese first, and the Dogs eating it. But, my Lord, Mr. Neverout's Wit begins to run low, for I vow he said this before. Pray, Colonel, give him a Pinch, and I'll do as much for you.

Lord Sp. My Lady Smart, your Ladyship has

a very fine Scarf.

Lady Sm. Yes, my Lord, it will make a flaming Figure in a Country Church.

[Footman

[Footman comes in.]

Footman. Madam, Dinner's upon the Table. Col. Faith, I'm glad of it; my Belly began to cry Cupboard.

Nev. I wish I may never hear worse News.

Miss. What; Mr. Neverout, you are in great hafte; I believe your Belly thinks your Throat's cut.

Nev. No, faith Mifs, three Meals a Day, and a good Supper at Night, will ferve my Turn.

Miss. To say the Truth, I'm hungry.

Nev. And I'm angry, fo let us both go fight.

[They go in to Dinner, and after the usual Compliments, take their Seats.]

Lord Sm. Ladies and Gentlemen, will you eat any Oysters before Dinner.

Col. With all my Heart. [Takes an Oyster.]

He was a bold Man that first eat an Oyster.

Lady Sm. They say, Oysters are a cruel Meat; because we eat them alive: Then, they are an uncharitable Meat; for we leave nothing to the Poor. And, they are an ungodly Meat, because we never say Grace to them.

Nev. Faith, that's as well faid, as if I had faid

it my felf.

Lady Sm. Well, we are all well fet, if we be but as well ferv'd. Come, Colonel, handle your

Arms: Shall I help you to some Beef?

Col. If your Ladyship pleases; and pray don't cut like a Mother-in-law, but send me a large Slice; for I love to lay a good Foundation: I vow it a noble Sirloyn.

New.

Nev. Ay, here's Cut and come again, Miss.

But pray, why is it called a Sirloyn?

Lord Sp. Why, you must know, that our King James I. who loved good Eating, being invited to Dinner by one of his Nobles, and seeing a large Loyn of Beef at his Table; he drew out his Sword, and in a Frolick Knighted it. Few People know the Secret of this.

Lord Sp. Beef is Man's Meat, my Lord.

Lord Sm. But, my Lord, I say, Beef is the King of Meat.

Miss. Pray, what have I done, that I must not

have a Plate?

Lady Sm. [To Lady Answerall.] What will your Ladyship please to eat?

Lady Answ. Pray, Madam, help your self.

Col. They fay Eating and Scratching wants but a Beginning. If you will give me Leave, I'll help my felf to a Slice of this Shoulder of Veal.

Lady Sm. Colonel, you can't do a kinder Thing. Well, you are all heartily welcome, as I may fay.

Col. They fay there are thirty and two good

Bits in a Shoulder of Veal.

Lady Sm. Ay, Colonel; thirty bad Bits, and two good ones; you see I understand you; but, I hope you have got one of the two good ones?

Nev. Colonel, I'll be of your Mess.

Col. Then, pray Tom, carve for your felf: They fay, two Hands in a Dish, and one in a Purse. Hah, said I well, Tom?

Nev. Colonel, you fpoke like an Oracle.

[Miss to Lady Answerall.]

Miss. Madam, will your Ladyship help me to fome Fish?

Lord

Lord Sm. [To Neverout.] Tom, they fay Fish should swim thrice.

Nev. How is that, my Lord?

Lord Sm. Why, Tom, first it should swim in the Sea; (do you mind me?) then it should swim in Butter; and at last Sirrah, it should swim in good Claret. I think I have made it out.

[Footman to Lora Smart.]

Footman. My Lord, Sir John Linger is coming

up.

Lord Sm. God fo! I invited him to Dinner with me to-Day, and forgot it. Well, defire him to walk in.

[Sir John Linger comes in.]

Sir John. What; are you at it? Why, then I'll be gone.

Lady Sm. Sir John, I beg you will fet down;

come, the more, the merrier.

Sir John. Ay; but the fewer the better Cheer.

Lady Sm. Well, I am the worst in the World at making Apologies. It was my Lord's Fault. I doubt you must kis the Hare's Foot.

Sir John. I see you are fast by the Teeth.

Col. Faith, Sir John, we are killing that would kill us.

Lord Sp. You see, Sir John, we are upon a Business of Life and Death. Come, will you do as we do. You are come in Pudden Time.

Sir John. Ay, this you would be doing if I were dead. What, you keep Court Hours I see. I'll be going, and get a Bit of Meat at my Inn.

Lady Sm. Why, we won't eat you, Sir John. Sir John. It is my own Fault; but, I was kept

Sir

by a Fellow, who bought some Derbyshire Oxen from me.

Nev. You see, Sir John, we stayed for you, as one Horse does for another.

Lady Sm. My Lord, will you help Sir John to fome Beef. Lady Answerall, pray eat, you see your Dinner. I am sure, if we had known we should have such good Company, we should have been better provided; but, you must take the Will for the Deed. I'm afraid you are invited to your Loss.

Col. And, pray, Sir John, how do you like the Town? You have been absent a long Time.

Sir John. Why, I find little London stands just where it did when I left it last.

Nev. What do you think of Hanover-Square, why, Sir John, London is gone out of Town fince

you faw it.

Lady Sm. Sir John, I can only say, you are heartily welcome; and I wish I had something better for you.

Col. Here's no Salt; Cuckolds will run away

with the Meat.

Lord Sm. Pray edge a little, to make more Room for Sir John. Sir John fall to, you know

half an Hour is foon loft at Dinner.

Sir John I protest, I can't eat a Bit; for I took Share of a Beef-Stake, and two Mugs of Ale with my Chapman, besides a Tankard of March Beer as soon as I got out of Bed.

Lady Anfw. Not fresh and fasting, I hope.

Sir John. Yes faith, Madam, I always wash my

Kettle before I put the Meat in it.

Lady Sm. Poh! Sir John, you have feen nine Houses fince you eat last: Come, you have kept a Corner of your Stomach for a Bit of Venison-Pasty.

Sir John. Well, I'll try what I can do when it comes up.

Lady Answ. Come, Sir John, you may go fur-

ther, and fare worfe.

Miss. [To Neverout.] Pray, Mr. Neverout, will you please to send me a Piece of Tongue?

Nev. By no Means, Madam; one Tongue's

enough for a Woman.

Col. Miss, here's a Tongue that never told a

Lye.

Miss. That was because it could not speak. Why, Colonel, I never told a Lye in my Life.

Nev. I appeal to all the Company, whether that

be not the the greatest Lye that ever was told.

Col. [To Neverout.] Prethee, Tom, fend me the two Legs, and Rump, and Liver, of that Pigeon; for you must know, I love what no Body else loves.

Nev. But what if any of the Ladies should long. Well, here take it, and the Devil do you good

with it.

Lady Answ. Well; this eating and drinking takes away a Body's Stomach.

Nev. I'm fure I have loft mine.

Miss. What! the Bottom of it, I suppose. Nev. No really, Miss, I have quite lost it.

Mis. I should be forry a poor Body had found it.

Lady Sm. But, Sir John, we hear you are marryed fince we faw you last. What; you have stolen a Wedding, it seems.

Sir John. Well, one can't do a foolish Thing once in one's Life, but one must hear of it a hun-

dred Times.

Col. And pray, Sir John, how does your Lady unknown?

Sir John. My Wife's well, Colonel; and at your Service in a civil Way. Ha, ha. [He laughs.]

Miss.

Miss. Pray, Sir John, is your Lady tall, or short?

Sir John. Why, Miss, I thank God, she's a little Evil.

Lord Sp. Come, give me a Glass of Claret.

[Footman fills bim a Bumper.]

Why do you fill fo much?

Nev. My Lord, he fills as he loves you.

Lady Sm. Miss, shall I send you some Cucumber?

Miss. Madam, I dare not touch it; for they fay, Cucumbers are cold in the third Degree.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, do you love Pudden? Nev. Madam, I'm like all Fools; I love every Thing that is good: But the Proof of the Pud-

den, is in the eating.

Col., Sir John, I hear you are a great Walker,

when you are at home.

Sir John. No, Faith, Colonel, I always love to walk with a Horse in my Hand. But I have had devilish bad Luck in Horse-Flesh, of late.

Lady Sm. Why then, Sir John, you must kiss

a Parson's Wife.

Lady Sm. They fay, Sir John, that your Lady

has a great deal of Wit.

Sir John. Madam, she can make a Pudden; and has just Wit enough to know her Husband's Breeches from another Man's.

Lady Sm. My Lord Sparkish, I have some ex-

cellent Cy ler, will you please to taste it.

Lord Sp. My Lord, I should like it well e-nough, if it were not so treacherous.

Lord Sm. Pray, my Lord, how is it treacherous?

Vol. VI. X Lerd

Lord Sp. Because it smiles in my Face, and cuts my Throat. [Here a loud Laugh.]

Miss. Odd so, Madam, your Knives are very

sharp, for I have cut my Finger.

Lady Sm. I'm forry for it, pray which Finger?

Miss. Why, this Finger, (God bless the Mark)

no, 'tis this: I vow, I can't find which it is.

Nev. Ay, the Fox had a Wound, and he could not tell where, &c. Bring some Water to throw

in her Face.

Miss. Pray, Mr. Neverout, did you ever draw a Sword in Anger? I warrant, you would faint at the Sight of your own Blood.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, shall I fend you some

Veal?

Nev. No, Madam, I don't love it.

Miss. Then, pray for them that do. I defire your Ladyship will fend me a Bit.

Lord Sm. Tom, my Service to you.

Nev. My Lord; this Moment, I did my felf the Honour to drink to your Lordship.

Lord Sm. Why then, that's Hartfordshire Kind-

nefs.

Lord Sp. Why then, Colonel, my humble Service to you.

Nev. Pray, my Lord, don't make a Bridge of

my Nofe.

Lord Sp. Well, a Glass of this Wine is as comfortable, as Matrimony to an old Maid.

Col. Sir John, I design one of these Days, to come and beat up your Quarters in Derbyshire.

Sir John. Faith, Colonel, come and welcome; and stay away, and heartily welcome. But you were born within the Sound of Bow Bell, and don't Care to stir so far from London.

Miss. Pray, Colonel, fend me fome Fritters.

[Colonel

[Colonel takes them out with his Hand.]

Col. Here, Miss, they say, Fingers were made before Forks, and Hands before Knives.

Lady Sm. Methinks, this Pudden is too much

boyl'd.

Lady Anfw. O, Madam, they fay a Pudden is

Poison, when it's too much boyl'd.

Nev. Miss, shall I help you to a Pigeon? Here's a Pigeon so finely roasted, it cries, Come eat me.

Miss. No, Sir, I thank you.

Nev. Why then, you may chuse.

Miss. I have chosen already.

Nev. Well; you may be worse offered, before you are twice married.

[The Colonel fills a large Plate of Soure.]

Lord Sm. Why, Colonel, you don't mean to eat all that Soupe?

Col. O, my Lord, this is my fick Dish; when

I am well, I have a Bigger.

Miss. [To Colonel. 1 Sup Simon; good Broth.

Nev. This feems to be a good Pullet.

Miss. I warrant, Mr. Neverout, knows what's

good for himfelf.

Lord Sp. Tom, I shan't take your Word for it, help me to a Wing.

[Neverout tries to cut off a Wing.]

Nev. I'gad, I can't hit the Joynt.

Lord Sp. Why then, think of a Cuckold.

Nev. O, now I have nickt it.

[Gives it Lord Sparkish.]

Lord Sp. Why, a Man may eat this, though his Wife lay a Dying.

Col. Pray, Friend, give me a Glass of Small-

Beer, if it be good.

Lord Sm. Why, Colonel, they fay, there is no fuch Thing as good Small-Beer, good brown Bread, or a good old Woman.

Lady Sm. [To Lady Answerall.] Madam, I beg your Ladyship's Pardon, I did not see you when

I was cutting that Bit.

Lady Answ. O, Madam, after you is good Manners.

Lady Sm. Lord, here's a Hair in the Sawce. Lord Sp. Then, Madam, fet the Hounds after it.

Nev. Pray, Colonel, help me, however, to fome of that fame Sawce.

Col. Come, I think you are more Sawce than

Pig.

Lord Sm. Sir John, chear up, my Service to you: Well, what do you think of the World to come?

Sir John. Truly, my Lord, I think of it as little as I can.

Lady Sm. [Putting a Skewer on a Plate.] Here, take this Skewer, and carry it down to the Cook, to drefs it for her own Dinner.

Nev. I beg your Ladyship's Pardon; but this

Small-Beer is dead.

Lady Sm. Why then, let it be bury'd.

Col. This is admirable black Pudden; Miss, shall I carve you some? I am the worst Carver in the World; I should never make a good Chaplain. I can just carve Pudden, and that's all.

Miss. No, thank ye, Colonel; for they fay, those that eat black Pudden, will dream of the

Devil.

Lord Sm. O, here comes the Venison Pasty: Here, take the Soupe away.

[He cuts it up, and lastes the Venison.]

S'buds, this Venison is musty.

[Neverout eats a Piece, and burns bis Mouth.]

Lord Sm. What's the Matter, Tom? You have Tears in your Eyes, I think. What dost cry for, Man?

Nev. My Lord, I was just thinking of my poor Grandmother; she dyed just this very Day seven Years.

[Miss takes a Bit, and burns ber Mouth.]

Nev. And pray, Miss, why do you cry too?

Miss. Because you were not hanged the Day
your Grandmother dyed.

Lord Sm. I'd have given forty Pounds, Miss,

to have faid that.

Col. I'gad, I think, the more I eat, the hungryer I am.

Lord Sp. Why, Colonel, they fay, one Shoul-

der of Mutton drives down another.

Nev. I'gad, if I were to fast for my Life, I would take a good Breakfast in the Morning, a good Dinner at Noon, and a good Supper at Night.

Lord Sp. My Lord, this Venison is plaguily

pepper'd. Your Cook has a heavy Hand.

Lord Sm. My Lord, I hope you are Pepper Proof. Come, here's a Health to the Founders.

Lady Sm. Ay, and to the Confounders too.

Lord Sm. Lady Sparkish, does not your Ladythip love Venison?

Lady

Lady Sp. No, my Lord, I can't endure it in my Sight; therefore please to send me a good Picce of Meat and Crust.

Lord Sp. [Drinks to Neverout.] Come, Tom,

not always to my Friends, but once to you.

Nev. [Drinks to Lady Smart.] Come, Madam, here's a Health to our Friends, and hang the rest of our Kin.

Lady Sm. [To Lady Answerall.] Madam, will your Ladyship have any of this Hare?

Lady Anfro. No, Madam; they fay 'tis melan-

choly Meat.

Lady Sm. Then, Madam, shall I fend you the Brains: I beg your Ladyship's Pardon, for they say, 'tis not good Manners to offer Brains.

Lady Anfw. No, Madam, for perhaps it will

make me Hare-brain'd.

Nev. Mits, I must tell you one Thing.

Miss. [With a Glass in her Hand.] Hold your Tongue, Mr. Neverout; don't speak in my Tip.

Col. Well, he was an ingenious Man that first

found out eating and drinking.

Lord Sp. Of all Vittels, Drink digefts the quickest. Give me a Glass of Wine.

Nev. My Lord, your Wine is too strong.

Lord Sm. Ay, Tom, as much as you are too good.

Miss. This Almond Pudden was pure good;

but it is grown quite cold.

Nev. So much the better Mis; cold Pudden will fettle your Love.

Miss. Pray, Mr. Nevercut, are you going to

take a Voyage?

Nev. Why, do you ask, Mis?

Miss. Because, you have laid in so much Beef.

Sir John. You two have eat up the whole Pudden betwixt you.

Miss. Sir John, here's a little Bit left, will you

please to have it?

Sir John. No, thankee, I don't love to make a Fool of my Mouth.

Col. [Calling to the Butler.] John, is your Small-

Beer good?

Butler. An please your Honour, my Lord and

Lady like it; I think it is good.

Col. Why then, John, d'ye fee, if you are fure your Small-Beer is good, d'ye mark? Then give me a Glass of Wine, [All laugh.]

Lady Sm. Sir John, how does your Neighbour Gatherall of the Park? I hear he has lately made

a Purchase.

Sir John. Oh; Dick Gatherall knows how to butter his Bread, as well as any Man in Derbyshire.

Lady Sm. Why he used to go very fine, when

he was here in Town.

Sir John. Ay, and it became him, as a Saddle becomes a Sow.

Col. I knew his Lady; and, I think, she's a

very good Woman.

Sir John. Faith, the has more Goodness in her little Finger, than he has in his whole Body.

[Colonel tasting the Wine.]

Lord Sm. Well, Colonel, how do you like that Wine?

Col. This Wine should be eaten; 'tis too good to be drank.

Lord Sm. I'm very glad you like it; and, pray don't spare it.

Cook's Shop.

1.7/8

Lady Sm. And, pray Sir John, what do you fay to my Wine?

Sir John. I'll take another Glass first: Second

Thoughts are best.

Lord Sp. Pray, Lady Smart, you fit near that Ham, will you please to send me a Bit?

Lady Sm. With all my Heart. [She fends him a Piece.] Pray, my Lord, how do you like it?

Lord Sp. I think it is a Limb of Lot's Wife. [He eats it with Mustard.] I'gad, my Lord, your Mustard is very uncivil.

Lady Sm. Why uncivil, my Lord?

Lord Sp. Because, it takes me by the Nose, I'gad. Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, I find you are a very good Carver.

Col. Oh Madam, that's no Wonder; for you must know, Tom Neverout carves a-Sundays.

[Mr. Neverout overturns the Saltcellar.]

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, you have overturn'd the Salt; and that's a Sign of Anger. I'm afraid Miss and you will fall out.

Lady Answ. No, no; throw a little of it into

the Fire, and all will be well.

Nev. O Madam, the falling out of Lovers, you know—

Miss. Lovers! very fine! fall out with him! I

wonder when we were in.

Sir John. For my Part, I believe the young Gentlewoman is his Sweet-Heart; there's fuch fooling and fidling betwixt them. I am fure, they fay in our Country, that shiddle come sh—'s the Beginning of Love.

Miss. Nay, I love Mr. Neverout, as the Devil loves holy Water. I love him like Pye, I'd rather

the Devil wou'd have him than I.

Miss. Come, here's t'ye to stop your Mouth. Nev. I'd rather you would stop it with a Kiss.

Miss. A Kiss! marry come up my dirty Couzin: Are you no sicker? Lord! I wonder what Fool it was, that first invented kissing?

Nev. Well, I'm very dry.

Miss. Then you are the better to burn, and the worse to fry.

Lady Answ. God bless you, Colonel, you have

a good Stroak with you.

Col. O Madam, formerly I could eat all, but now I leave nothing; I eat but one Meal a-Day.

Miss. What? I suppose, Colonel, that's from Morning till Night.

Nev. Faith, Miss, and well was his Want.

Lord Sm. Pray, Lady Answerall, taste this Bit of Venison.

Lady Answ. I hope, your Lordship, will set me a good Example.

Lord Sm. Here's a Glass of Cyder fill'd. Miss,

you must drink it.

Miss. Indeed, my Lord, I can't.

Nev. Come Miss; better Belly burst than good

Liquor be loft.

Miss. Pish, well, in Life there was never any Thing so teazing; I had rather shed it in my Shoes: I wish it were in your Guts, for my Share.

Lord Sm. Mr. Neverout, you ha'n't tasted my

Cyder yet.

Nev. No, my Lord, I have been just eating Soupe; and they fay, if one drinks in one's Por-

ridge, one will cough in one's Grave.

Lord Sm. Come, take Miss's Glass, she wish't it was in your Guts; let her have her Wish for once; Ladies can't abide to have their Inclinations cross't.

Lady.

Lady Sm. [To Sir John.] I think, Sir John, you have not tasted the Venison yet.

Sir John. I seldom eat it, Madam: However,

please to send me a little of the Crust.

Lord Sp. Why, Sir John, you had as good eat the Devil, as the Broth he's boyl'd in.

Nev. I have dined as well as my Lord-Mayor.

Mis. I thought I could have eaten this Wing of a Chicken; but, I find, my Eye's bigger than my Belly.

Lord Sm. Indeed, Lady. Answerall, you have

eaten nothing.

Lady Answ. Pray, my Lord, see all the Bones on my Plate. They say, a Carpenter's known by his Chips.

Nev. Mifs, will you reach me that Glass of

Telly?

Miss. [Giving it to bim.] You see, 'tis but ask and have.

Nev. Mifs, I would have a bigger Glafs.

Miss. What, you don't know your own Mind; you are neither well full nor fasting. I think that is enough.

Nev. Ay, one of the enough's: I am fure it is

little enough.

Miss. Yes, but you know fweet Things are backfor the Tecth.

Nev. [To Eady Answerall.]. Madam, I don't

like this Part of the Veal you lent me.

Lady Answ. Well, Mr. Neverout, I find you are a true English-Man, you never know when you are well.

Col, Well, I have made my whole Dinner of Beef.

Lady Anf. Why, Colonel, a Belly full is a Belly full, if it be but of Wheat-Straw.

Col.

Col. Well, after all, Kitchen Phyfick is the best

Phyfick.

Lord Sm. And the best Doctors in the World, are Doctor Diet, Doctor Quiet, and Doctor Merryman.

Lord Sp. What do you think of a little House

well filled?

Sir John. And a little Land well till'd? Col. Ay, and a little Wife well will'd?

Nev. My Lady Smart, pray help me to some of the Breast of that Goose.

Lord Sm. Tom, I have heard, that Goose upon. Goose is false Heraldry.

Miss. What! will you never have done stuffing? Lord Sm. This Goose is quite raw. Well; God sends Meat, but the Devil sends Cooks.

Nev. Miss, can you tell which is the white

Goose, or the grey Goose the Gander?

Miss. They fay, a Fool will ask more Questions, than twenty wife Men can answer.

Col. Indeed, Miss, Tom Neverout has posed

you.

Miss. Why, Colonel, every Dog has his Day. But, I believe, I shall never see a Goose again, without thinking on Mr. Neverout.

Lord Sm. Well said Miss; I'saith Girl, thou hast brought thy self off cleverly. Tom, what say

you to that?

Col. Faith, Tom is nonplust; he looks plaguily

down in the Mouth.

Miss. Why, my Lord, you see he's the provokingest Creature in Life: I believe, there is not such another in the varsal World.

Lady Anfw. Oh Miss, the World's a wide Place. Nev. Well, Miss, I'll give you Leave to call me any Thing, so you don't call me Spade.

Lord

Lord Sm. Well, but after all, Tom, can you tell me what's Latin for a Goose?

Nev. O my Lord, I know that; Why, Brandy is Latin for a Goose; and Tace is Latin for a Caudle.

Miss. Is that Manners, to shew your Larning before Ladac? Methinks you are grown very brisk of a sudden. I think, the Man's glad he's alive.

Sir Job. The Devil take your Wit, if this be Wit; for a spoils Company. Pray, Mr. Butler, bring me a Dram after my Goose; 'tis very good for the Wholesoms.

Lord Sm. Come, bring me the Loaf; I fometimes love to cut my own Bread.

Miss. I suppose, my Lord, you lay longest a

Bed to-Day.

Lord Sm. Miss, if I had said so, I should have told a Fib: I warrant you lay a Bed 'till the Cows came home. But, Miss, shall I cut you a little Crust, now my Hand is in?

Miss. If you please, my Lord; a Bit of under

Cruft.

Nev. [Whispering Miss.] I find you love to lie under.

Miss. [Aloud; pushing him from her.] What does the Man mean? Sir, I don't understand you at all.

Nev. Come, all Quarrels laid aside: Here, Miss, may you live a thousand Years. [He drinks to ber.]

Miss. Pray Sir, don't stint me.

Lord Sin. Sir John, will you taste my Ollober? I think it is very good; but, I believe, not equal to yours in Derbysbire.

Sir John. My Lord, I beg your Pardon; but,

they fay, the Devil made Askers.

Lord Sm. [To the Butler.] Here, bring up the great Tankard full of October, for Sir John.

Col.

Col. [Drinking to Miss.] Miss, your Health;

may you live all the Days of your Life.

Lady Ans. Well, Miss, you'll certainly be soon marryed: Here's two Bachelors drinking to you at once.

Lady Sm. Indeed, Miss, I believe you were wrapt in your Mother's Smock, you are so well beloved.

Miss. Where's my Knife, sure I han't eaten it? O, here it is.

Sir John. No, Miss, but your Maidenhead hangs

in your Light.

Mijs. Pray, Sir John, is that a Derbyshire Compliment? Here, Mr. Neverout, will you take this Piece of Rabbit, that you bid me carve for you?

Nev. I don't know.

Miss. Why, why, take it, or let it alone.

Nev. I will.

Miss. What will you?

Nev. Why, take it, or let it alone.

Miss. Well, you're a provoking Creature.

Sir John. [Talking with a Glass of Wine in his Hand.] I remember a Farmer in our Country.

Lord Sm. [Interrupting bim.] Pray, Sir John,

did you ever hear of Parion Palmer?

Sir John. No, my Lord; what of him?

Lord Sm. Why, he used to preach over his Li-

quor.

Sir John. I beg your Pardon. Here's your Lordship's Health; I'd drink it up, if it were a Mile to the Bottom.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, have you been at the new Play?

Nev. Yes, Madam, I went the first Night.

Lady Sm. Well, and how did it take? Nev. Why, Madam, the Poet is damn d. Sir John. God forgive you; that's very uncharitable; you ought not to judge fo rashly of any Christian.

Nev. [Whispers Lady Smart.] Was ever such a Dunce? How well he knows the Town! see how he stares like a stuck Pig! Well, but Sir John, are you acquainted with any of our fine Ladies yet? Any of our famous Toasts?

Sir John. No, damn your Fireships; I have a

Wife of my own.

Lady Sm. Pray, my Lady Answerall, how do you like these preserved Oranges?

Lady Ans. Indeed, Madam, the only Fault I

find, is, that they are too good.

Lady Sm. O, Madam, I have heard 'em fay, that too good, is stark nought.

[Miss drinking Part of a Glass of Wine.]

Nev. Pray, let me drink your Snuff.

Miss. No, indeed, you shan't drink after me;

for you'll know my Thoughts.

Nev. I know them already; you are thinking of a good Husband. Besides, I can tell your Meaning, by your Mumping.

Lady Sm. Pray, my Lord, did not you order the Butler to bring up a Tankard of our October to

Sir John? I believe, they stay to brew it.

[The Butler brings the Tankard to Sir John.]

Sir John. Won't your Lordship please to drink first?

Lord Sm. No, Sir John, 'tis in a very good Hand: I'll pledge you.

Col. [To Lord Smart.] My Lord, I love October

as well as Sir John; and I hope, you won't make

Fish of one, and Flesh of another.

Lord Sm. Colonel, you're heartily welcome: Come, Sir John, take it by Word of Mouth, and then give it the Colonel.

[Sir John drinks.]

Lord Sm. Well, Sir John, how do you like it? Sir John. Not as well as my own in Derbyshire. 'Tis plaguy fmall.

Lady Sm. I never taste Malt Liquor; but they

fay, 'tis well Hopp'd,
Sir John. Hopp'd! Why, if it had hopp'd a little further, it would have hopp'd into the River. O, my Lord; my Ale is Meat, Drink, and Cloth. It will make a Cat speak, and a wise Man dumb.

Lady Sm. I was told, ours was very ftrong.

Sir John. Ay, Madam, strong of the Water: I believe, the Brewer forgot the Malt, or the River was too near him. Faith, it is meer Whipbelly-vengeance: He that drinks most, has the worst Share.

Col. I believe, Sir John, Ale is as plenty as

Water, at your House.

Sir John. Why, Faith, at Christinas we have many Comers and Goers; and they must not be fent away without a Cup of good Christmas Ale, for fear they should p--ss behind the Door.

Lady Sm. I hear, Sir John has the nicest Garden in England; they fay, 'tis kept fo clean, that you

can't find a Place where to fpit.

Sir John. O, Madam, you are pleased to say so. Lady Sm. But, Sir John, your Ale is terrible strong and heady in Derbyshire; and will soon make one drunk and fick, what do you then?

Sir

Sir John. Why, indeed, it is apt to Fox one; but our Way is, to take a Hair of the fame Dog next Morning. I take a new laid Egg for Breakfast; and Faith, one should drink as much after an Egg, as after an Ox.

Lord Sm. Tom Neverout, will you tafte a Glass

of the October?

Nev. No, Faith, my Lord, I like your Wine; and I won't put a Churl upon a Gentleman: Your Honour's Claret is good enough for me.

Lady Sm. What? is this Pigeon left for Manners? Colonel, shall I fend you the Legs and

Rump?

Col. Madam, I could not eat a Bit more, if the House was full.

Lord Sm. [Carving a Partridge.] Well, one may ride to Rumford upon this Knife, it is so blunt.

Lady Answ. My Lord, I beg your Pardon; but they say, an ill Workman never had good Tools.

Lord Sm. Will your Lordship have a Wing of it?

Lord Sp. No, my Lord, I love the Wing of an Ox a great deal better.

Lord Sm. I'm always cold after eating.

Col. My Lord, they fay, that's a Sign of long Life.

Lord Sm. Ay, I believe I shall live 'till all my Friends are weary of me.

Col. Pray, does any Body here hate Cheese? I

would be glad of a Bit.

Lord Sm. An odd kind of Fellow dined with me t'other Day; and when the Cheese came upon the Table, he pretended to faint. So, some Body said, pray take away the Cheese: No, said I, pray take take away the Fool: Said I well? [Here a long and

loud Laugh.]

Col. Faith, my Lord, you ferved the Coxcomb right enough: And therefore, I wish we had a Bit of your Lordship's Oxfordshire Cheese.

Lord Sm. Come, hang faving, bring us a half-

porth of Cheese.

Lady Answ. They say, Cheese digests every Thing but itself.

[Footman brings in a great whole Cheefe.]

Lord Sp. Ay, this would look handsome if any Body should come in.

Sir John. Well, I'm weily broften, as they fayn

in Lancashire.

Lady Sm. Oh, Sir John, I wou'd I had fome-thing to broft you withal.

Lord Sm. Come, they fay, 'tis merry in Hall,

when Beards wag all.

Lady Sm. Miss, shall I help you to some Cheese? Or, will you carve for your self?

Nev. I'll hold fifty Pound, Miss won't cut the

Cheese.

Miss. Pray, why fo, Mr. Neverout?

Nev. O, there is a Reafon, and you know it well enough.

Miss. I can't, for my Life, understand what the

Gentleman means.

Lord Sm. Pray, Tom, change the Discourse, in troth you are too bad.

[Colonel subifpers Neverout.]

Col. Smoak, Miss, you have made her fret like Gum taffety.

Vol. VI.

Z

Lady

Lady Sm V

Lady Sm. Well; but Miss, (hold your Tongue, Mr. Neverout) shall I cut you a Bit of Cheese?

Miss. No really, Madam, I have dined this

half Hour.

Lady Sm. What? quick at Meat, quick at work, they fay.

[Sir John nods.]

Lord Sm. What, you are fleepy Sir John. Do

you fleep after Dinner?

Sir John. Yes, Faith, I fometimes take a Nap after my Pipe; for when the Belly's full, the Bones will be at rest.

Lord Sm. Come, Colonel, help your felf, and your Friends will love you the better.

[To Lady Answerall.]

Madam, your Ladyship eats nothing.

Lady Answ. Lord, Madam, I have fed like a Farmer; I shall grow as fat as a Porpoise: I swear, my Jaws are weary with chawing.

Col. I have a Mind to eat a Piece of that Stur-

geon, but I fear it will make me fick.

Nev. A rare Soldier indeed; let it alone, and I

warrant, it won't hurt you.

Col. Well, but it would vex a Dog to see a Pudden creep.

[Sir John rises.]

Lord Sm. Sir John, what are you doing? Sir John. Swolks, I must be going, by'r Lady; I have earnest Business; I must do, as the Beggars do, go away when I have got enough.

Lord Sm. Well, but flay 'till this Bottle's out: You know, the Man was hanged that left his Li-

quor

quor behind him; besides, a Cup in the Pate, is a Mile in the Gate; and, a Spur in the Head, is worth two in the Heel.

Sir John. Come then, one Brimmer to all your Healths.

[The Footman gives him a Glass half full.]

Pray, Friend, what was the rest of this Glass made for? An Inch at the Top, Friend, is worth two at the Bottom.

[He gets a Brimmer, and drinks it off.]

Well; there's no Deceit in a Brimmer; and there's no false Latin in this, your Wine is excellent good, so I thank you for the next; for, I am sure of this. Madam, has your Ladyship any Commands in Derbyshire? I must go sisteen Miles To-Night.

Lady Sm. None, Sir John, but to take Care of yourfelf; and my most humble Service to your Lady unknown.

Sir John. Well, Madam, I can but love and

thank you.

Lady Sm. Here, bring Water to wash; though really you have all eaten so little, that you have no Need to wash your Mouths.

Lord Sm. But prithee, Sir John, stay a while

longer.

Sir John. No, my Lord, I am to smoak a Pipe with a Friend, before I leave the Town.

Col. Why, Sir John, had not you better fet out To-morrow?

Sir John. Colonel, you forget, To-morrow is Sunday.

on Sundays, because I shall have the Prayers of the

Sir John. Well, Colonel, thou art a mad Fellow to make a Priest of.

Nev. Fye, Sir John, do you take Tobacco? How can you make a Chimney of your Mouth?

Sir John. [To Neverout.] What? you don't fmoak, I warrant you, but you fmock. (Ladies, I beg your Pardon.) Colonel, do you never fmoke?

Col. No, Sir John, but I take a Pipe some-

times.

Sir John. I'Faith, one of your finical London Blades dined with me last Year in Derbyshire: So, after Dinner, I took a Pipe: So, my Gentleman turn'd away his Head: So, said I, what Sir, do you never smoak? So, he answered as you do, Colonel, no; but I sometimes take a Pipe: So, he took a Pipe in his Hand, and siddled with it, 'till he broke it: So, said I, pray, Sir, can you make a Pipe? So, he said, no: So, said I, why then, Sir, if you can't make a Pipe, you should not break a Pipe. So, we all laught.

Lord Sm. Well, but Sir John, they fay, that the Corruption of Pipes, is the Generation of Stop-

pers.

Sir John. Colonel, I hear you go fometimes to Derbyshire, I wish you would come and foul a Plate with me.

Col. I hope, you'll give me a Soldier's Bottle.

Sir John. Come, and try.

Sir John. Mr. Neverout, you are a Town-Wit, can you tell me what Kind of Herb is Tobacco?

Nev. Why, an Indian Herb, Sir John.

Sir John. No, 'tis a Pot-Herb; and so here's t'ye in a Pot of my Lord's October.

Lady

Lady Sm. I hear, Sir John, fince you are married, you have forfworn the Town.

Sir John. No, Madam, I never forswore any

Thing but building of Churches.

Lady Sm. Well, but Sir John, when may we hope to see you again in London?

Sir John. Why, Madam, not 'till the Ducks

have eat up the Dirt, as the Children fay.

Nev. Come, Sir John, I foresee it will rain terribly.

Lord Sm. Come, Sir John, do nothing rashly,

let us drink first.

Lord Sp. Nay, I know Sir John will go, though he was fure it would rain Cats and Dogs. But, pray flay, Sir John, you'll be Time enough to go to Bed by Candle-light.

Lord Sm. Why, Sir John, if you must needs go, while you stay, make good Use of your Time. Here's my Service to you. A Health to our

Friends in Derbysbire.

Sir John. Not a Drop more.

Col. Why, Sir John, you used to love a Glass

of good Wine in former Times.

Sir John. Why, so I do still, Colonel; but a Man may love his House very well, without riding on the Ridge; besides, I must be with my Wise on Tuesday, or there will be the Devil and all to pay.

Col. Well, if you go To-Day, I wish you may

be wet to the Skin.

Sir John. Ay, but they fay, the Prayers of the Wicked won't prevail.

[Sir John takes bis Leave, and goes away.]

Lord Sm. Well, Miss, how do you like Sir John?

Mijs,

Miss. Why, I think, he's a little upon the Silly, or so; I believe he has not all the Wit in the World; but I don't pretend to be a Judge.

Nev. Faith, I believe he was bred at Hogsnor-

ton, where the Pigs play upon the Organs.

Lord Sp. Why, Tom, I thought you and he had

been Hand and Glove.

Nev. Faith, he shall have a clean Threshold for me, I never darkned his Door in my Life, neither in Town, nor Country; but, he's a queer old Duke, by my Conscience; and yet, after all, I take him to be more Knave than Fool.

Lord Sm. Well, come, a Man's a Man, if he

has but a Hofe on his Head.

Col. I was once with him, and fome other Company, over a Bottle; and I'gad, he fell afleep, and fnored fo loud, that we thought he was driving his Hogs to Market.

Nev. Why, what? You can have no more of a Cat, than her Skin. You can't make a Silk

Purse out of a Sow's Ear.

Lord Sp. Well, fince he's gone, the Devil go with him, and Sixpence; and there's Money and Company too.

Nev. Pray, Miss, let me ask you a Question?
Miss. Well, but don't ask Questions with a dirty
Face. I warrant, what you have to say, will keep
cold.

Col. Come, my Lord, against you are disposed, Here's to all that love and honour you.

Lord Sp. Ay, that was always Dick Nimble's

Health, I'm fure you know, he is dead.

Cal. Dead! Well, my Lord, you love to be a Messenger of ill News, I'm heartily forry; but, my Lord, we must all dye.

Nev.

Nev. I knew him very well; but pray, how

came he to dye?

Miss. There's a Question! You talk like a Poticary. Why, he dyed, because he could live no longer.

Nev. Well; rest his Soul; we must live by the

Living, and not by the Dead.

Lord Sp. You know his House was burnt down to the Ground.

Col. Yes, it was in the News. Why; Fire and Water are good Servants, but they are very bad Mafters.

Lord Sm. Here, take away, and fet down a Bottle of Burgundy. Ladies, you'll stay and drink a Glass of Wine before you go to your Tea.

[All's taken away, and the Wine fet down.]

[Miss gives Neverout a smart Pinch.]

Nev. Lord, Mils, what d'ye mean? D'ye think I have no feeling?

Miss. I'm forced to pinch, for the Times are

hard.

Nev. [Giving Miss a Pinch.] Take that, Miss: What's Sawce for a Goose, is Sawce for a Gander.

Miss. [screaming.] Well, Mr. Neverout, if I live, that shall neither go to Heaven nor Hell with you.

Nev. [takes Miss's Hand.] Come, Miss, let us

lay all Quarrels afide, and be Friends.

Miss. Don't be mauming and gauming a Body fo. Can't you keep your filthy Hands to your felf?

Nev. Pray, Miss, where did you get that Pick-Tooth Case?

Miss. I came honeftly by it.

Nev

Nev. I'm sure it was mine, for I lost just such a one. Nay, I don't tell you a Lye.

Miss. No, if you Lye, 'tis much.

Nev. Well, I'm fure 'tis mine.

Miss. What, you think every Thing is yours;

but a little the King has.

Nev. Colonel, you have feen my fine Pick-Tooth Case: Don't you think this is the very same?

Col. Indeed, Miss, it is very like it.

Miss. Ay, what he fays, you'll swear,

Nev. Well; but I'll prove it to be mine,

Miss. Ay, do if you can.

Nev. Why; what's yours is mine, and what's mine is my own.

Miss. Well, run on 'till you're weary, no Body holds you.

[Neverout gapes.]

Col. What, Mr. Neverout, do you gape for Preferment?

Nev. Faith, I may gape long enough before it falls into my Mouth.

Lady Sm. Mr. Neverout, I hear you live high.

Nev. Yes, Faith, Madam, live high, and lodge in a Garret.

Col. But, Miss, I forgot to tell you, that Mr. Neverout got the devilished Fall in the Park To-Day.

Miss. I hope he did not hurt the Ground. But, how was it Mr. Neverout? I wish I had been there

to laugh.

Nev. Why, Madam, it was a Place where a Cuckold had been bury'd, and one of his Horns flicking out, I happened to stumble against it. That was all.

Lady Sm. Ladies, let us leave the Gentlemen to themselves; I think it is Time to go to our Tea.

Lady Answ. and Miss. My Lords, and Gentle-

men, your most humble Servant.

Lord Sm. Well, Ladies, we'll wait on you an Hour hence.

[The Gentlemen alone.]

Lord Sm. Come, John, bring us a fresh Bottle. Col. Ay, my Lord; and pray let him carry off the dead Men, (as we say in the Army.) [Meaning the empty Bottles.]

Lord Sp. Mr. Neverout, pray is not that Bottle

full?

Nev. Yes, my Lord, full of Emptiness.

Lord Sm. And, d'ye hear, John, bring clean Glasses.

Col. I'll keep mine, for I think the Wine is the best Liquor to wash the Glasses in.





Third Conversation.

[The Ladies at their Tea.]

Lady Smart.



ELL, Ladies, now let us have a Cup of Difcourse to our selves.

Lady Answ. What do you think of your

Friend, Sir John Spendall?

Lady Sm. Why, Madam, 'tis happy for him that his Father was born before him.

Miss. They say, he makes a very ill Husband

to my Lady.

Lady Ans. Well, but he must be allowed to be the fondest Father in the World.

Lady Sm. Ay, Madam, that's true; for they fay, the Devil is kind to his own.

Miss. I am told, my Lady manages him to Admiration.

Lady Sm. That I believe, for she's as cunning as a dead Pig; but not half so honest.

Lady Answ. They say, she's quite a Stranger to all his Gallantries.

Lady

Lady Sm. Not at all; but you know, there's none so blind, as they that won't see.

Miss. Oh, Madam, I am told, she watches him

as a Cat would watch a Moufe.

Lady Answ. Well, if the ben't foully bely'd; the pays him in his own Coyn.

Lady Sm. Madam, I fancy I know your

Thoughts, as well, as if I were within you.

Lady Answ. Madam, I was t'other Day in Company with Mrs. Clatter; I find she gives her self Airs of being acquainted with your Ladyship.

Miss. O, the hideous Creature! Did you obferve her Nails. They were long enough to scratch

her Granum out of her Grave.

Lady Sm. Well, she and Tom Gossing were banging Compliments backwards and forwards. It look'd like two Asses scrubbing one another.

Miss. Ay, claw me, and I'll claw thee: But,

pray Madam, who were the Company?

Lady Sm. Why; there was all the World, and his Wife. There was Mrs. Clatter, Lady Singular, the Countess of Talkham, (I should have named her first) Tom Goslin, and some others, whom I have forgot.

Lady Anfw. I think the Countess is very fickly. Lady Sm. Yes, Madam, she'll never scratch a

grey Head, I promife her.

Mils. And pray, what was your Conversation?

Lady Sm. Why, Mrs. Clatter had all the Talk to her felf, and was perpetually complaining of her Misfortunes.

Lady Anfw. She brought her Husband ten thoufand Pounds; she has a Town-House, and Country-House; would the Woman have her— hung with Points?

Ledy

Lady Sm. She would fain be at the Top of the

House, before the Stairs are built.

Miss. Well, Comparisons are odious; but she's as like her Husband, as if she were spit out of his Mouth; as like as one Egg is to another. Pray, how was she drest?

Lady Sm. Why, she was as fine as Five-pence; but truly, I thought there was more Cost than Wor-

Lady Anf. I don't know her Husband; pray,

what is he?

Lady Sm. Why, he's a Concealer of the Law; you must know, he came to us as drunk as David's Sow.

Miss. What kind of Creature is he?

Lady Sm. You must know the Man and his Wife are coupled like Rabits; a Fat and a Lean. He's as fat as a Porpoise, and she's one of Pharaob's lean Kine. The Ladies, and Tom Goslin, were proposing a Party at Quadrille, but he refused to make one; damn your Cards, said he, they are the Devil's Books.

Lady Anf. A dull, unmannerly Brute! Well, God fend him more Wit, and me more Money.

Miss. Lord, Madam, I would not keep such

Company for the World.

Lady Sm. O, Miss, 'tis nothing when you are used to it. Besides, you know; for Want of Company, welcome Trumpery.

Miss. Did your Ladyship play?

Lady Sm. Yes, and won; so I came off with Fidler's Fare, Meat, Drink, and Money.

Lady Anf. Ay, what fays Pluck?

Miss. Well, my Elbow itches, I shall change my Bed-fellow.

Lady

Lady Sm. And my Left-Hand itches, I shall receive Money.

Lady Anf. And my Right-Eye itches, I shall

cry.

Nev. Miss, Ih ear your Friend, Mrs. Giddy, has discarded Dick Shuttle; pray, has she got another Lover?

Miss. I hear of none.

Nev. Why, the Fellow's rich, and I think she was a Fool, to throw out her dirty Water, before she got clean.

Lady Sm. Miss, that's a very handsome Gown

of yours, and finely made, very genteel.

Miss. I'm glad your Ladyship likes it.

Lady Anf Your Lover will be in Raptures, it

becomes you admirably.

Miss. Ay, I affure you, I won't take it as I have done, if this won't fetch him, the Devil fetch him, fay I.

Lady Sm. [To Lady Answerall.] Pray, Madam,

when did you fee Sir Peter Muckworm?

Lady Anf. Not this Fortnight: I hear, he's laid up with the Gout.

Lady Sm. What does he do for it?

Lady Anf. Why, I hear he's weary of doctoring it, and now makes Use of nothing but Patience, and Flannel.

Miss. Pray, how does he and my Lady agree? Lady Ans. You know he loves her.

Miss. They say, she plays deep with Sharpers,

that cheat her of her Money.

Lady Auf. Upon my Word, they must rife early that would cheat her of her Money. Sharp's the Word with her: Diamonds cut Diamonds.

Miss. Well, but I was affured from a good Hand,

Hand, that she lost at one Sitting, to the Tune of a hundred Guineas, make Money of that.

Lady Sm. Well, but do you hear, that Mrs.

Plump is brought to Bed at last?

Miss. And pray, what has God sent rhe?,

Lady Sm. Why, guess if you can.

Miss. A Boy, I suppose.

Lady Sm. No, you are out, guess again.

Miss. A Girl then.

Lady Sm. You have hit it; I believe you are a Witch.

Miss. O, Madam, the Gentlemen say, all fine Ladies are Witches; but I pretend to no such Thing.

Lady Anf. Well, she had good Luck to draw Yom Plump into Wedlock; she rises with her

upwards.

Miss. Fye, Madam, what do you mean?

Lady Sm. O, Miss, 'tis nothing what we say among ourselves.

Miss. Ay, Madam, but they say, Hedges have

Eyes, and Walls have Fars.

Lady Ans. Well, Miss, I can't help it; you know I am old Tell-truth, I love to call a Spade, a Spade.

[Lady Smart mistakes the Tea-Tongs for a Spoon.]

Lady Sm. What, I think my Wits are a Wooll-gathering To-Day.

Miss. Why, Madam, there was but a Right,

and a Wrong.

Lady Sm. Miss, I hear that you and Lady

Couplers, are as great as Cup, and Can.

Lady Anf. Ay, as great as the Devil, and the Earl of Kent.

Lady Sm. Nay, I am told you meet together with as much Love, as there is between the old Cow and the Hay-Stack.

Miss. I own, I love her very well; but there's

Difference betwixt staring and stark mad.

Lady Sm. They fay, she begins to grow fat. Miss. Fat, ay, fat as a Hen in the Forehead.

Lady Sm. Indeed, Lady Answerall, (pray forgive me) I think your Ladyship looks a little thinner, than when I saw you last.

Miss. Indeed, Madam, I think not; but your

Ladyship is one of Job's Comforters.

Lady Anf. Well, no Matter how I look; I am bought and fold. But really, Miss, you are so very obliging, that I wish I were a handsome young Lord for your Sake.

Miss. O, Madam, your Love's a Million.

Lady Sm. [To Lady Answerall.] Madam, will your Ladyship let me wait on you to the Play Tomorrow.

Lady Anf. Madam, it becomes me to wait on your Ladyship.

Miss. What, then I'm turn'd out for a Wrang-

ler.

[The Gentlemen come in to the Ladies, to drink Tea.]

Miss. Mr. Neverout, we wanted you fadly; you are always out of the Way, when you should be hang'd.

Nev. You wanted me? Pray, Miss, how do

you look, when you lye?

Miss. Better than you when you cry, Manners indeed. I find, you mend like sower Ale in Summer.

Nev.

Nev. I beg your Pardon, Miss; I only meant, when you lye alone.

Miss. That's well turn'd; one Turn more would

have turn'd you down Stairs.

Nev. Miss, come be kind for once, and order me a Dish of Coffee.

Miss. Pray, go your self; let us wear out the oldest first. Besides, I can't go, for I have a Bone in my Leg.

Col. They fay, a Woman need but once look

on her Apron Strings to find an Excuse.

Nev. Why, Miss, you are grown so peevish, a

Dog would not live with you.

Miss. Mr. Neverout, no Offence I hope; but, truly, I think, in a little Time, you intend to make the Colonel as bad as your felf; and that's as bad as bad can be.

Nev. My Lord; don't you think Miss improves wonderfully of late? Why, Miss, if I spoil the Colonel, I hope you will use him as you do me; for you know, love me, love my Dog.

Col. How's that, Tom? fay that again. Why,

if I am a Dog, shake Hands Brother.

[Here a great, loud and long Laugh.]

Lord Sm. But, pray Gentlemen, why always fo fevere upon poor Miss. On my Conscience, Colonel, and Tom Neverout, one of you two are both Knaves.

Col. My Lady Answerall, I intend to do my self the Honour of dining with your Ladyship Tomorrow.

Lady Anf. Ay, Colonel, do if you can.

Miss. I'm sure you'll be glad to be welcome.

Col.

Col. Miss, I thank you; and to reward you, I'll come and drink Tea with you in the Morning.

Miss. Colonel, there's two Words to that Bar-

Col. [To Lady Smart.] Your Ladyship has a very fine Watch; well may you wear it.

Lady Sm. It is none of mine, Colonel.

Col. Pray, whose is it then?

Lady Sm. Why, 'tis my Lord's; for, they fay,' a marry'd Woman has nothing of her own, but her Wedding-Ring, and her Hair-Lace. But if Women had been the Law-Makers, it would have been better.

Col. This Watch feems to be quite new.

Lady Sm. No, Sir, it has been twenty Years in my Lord's Family, but Quare lately put a new Case and Dial-Plate to it.

Nev. Why, that's for all the World like the Man, who fwore he kept the same Knife for forty Years, only he sometimes changed the Hast, and sometimes the Blade.

Lord Sm. Well, Tom, to give the Devil his due, thou art a right Woman's Man.

Col. Od fo, I have broke the Hinge of my

Snuff-Box, I'm undone, beside the Loss.

Miss. A-lack-a-Day, Colonel, I vow I had ra-

ther have found forty Shillings.

Nev. Why, Colonel; all I can fay, to comfort you, is, that you must mend it with a new one.

[Miss laughs.]

Col. What, Miss, you can't laugh, but you

must shew your Teeth.

Miss. I'm sure, you shew your Teeth, when you can't bite. Well, thus it must be, if we sell Ale.

Vol. VI. Aa Nev.

Nev. Miss, you smell very sweet: I hope, you don't carry Persumes.

Miss. Perfumes! No, Sir, I'd have you to

know, it is nothing but the Grain of my Skin.

Lord Sp. So, Ladies, and Gentlemen, methinks you are very witty upon one another: Come, box it about, 'twill come to my Father at last.

Col. Why, my Lord, you fee Miss has no Mercy, I wish she were marry'd; but I doubt, the grey Mare would prove the better Horse.

Miss. Well, God forgive you for that Wish.

Lord Sp. Never fear him, Miss.

Lord Sm. What have you to fay to that, Colonel? Nev. O, my Lord, my Friend, the Colonel, fcorns to fet his Wit against a Child.

Miss. Scornful Dogs will eat dirty Puddens.

Col. Well, Miss, they say, a Woman's Tongue is the last Thing about her that dyes: Therefore, let's kiss and Friends.

Miss. Hands off.

Lord Sp. Faith, Colonel, you are in for Ale, and Cakes. But, after all, Mifs, you are too fevere; you would not meddle with your Match?

Miss. All they can say, goes in at one Ear, and out at t'other for me, I can assure you; only, I wish they would be quiet, and let me drink my Tea.

New. What, I warrant you think all is loft that

goes beside your own Mouth.

Mis. Pray, Mr. Neverout, hold your Tongue for once, if it be possible. Women! One would think you were a Woman in Men's Cloaths, by your prating.

Nev. No, Miss, it is not handsome to see one hold one's Tongue; besides, I should slobber my

Fingers.

Col. Miss, did you never hear, that three Women, and a Goose, are enough to make a Market.

Miss. I'm fure, if Mr. Neverout, or you, were among them, it would make a Fair.

[Footman comes in.]

Lady Sm. Here, take away the Tea-Table, and bring up Candles.

Lady Ans. O, Madam, no Candles yet, I be-

feech you; don't let us burn Day-Light.

Nev. I dare swear; Miss, for her Part, will never burn Day-Light, if she can help it.

Miss. Lord, Mr. Neverout, one can't hear ones

own Ears for you.

Lady Sm. Indeed, Madam, it is blind Man's Holiday, we shall soon be all of a Colour.

Nev. Why then, Miss, we may kiss where we

like best.

Miss. Fogh, these Men talk of nothing but kissing. [She spits.]

Nev. What, Miss, does it make your Mouth

water?

Lady Sm. It is as good to be in the Dark, as without Light; therefore, pray bring in Candles. They fay, Women, and Linnen, shew best by Candle-Light. Come, Gentlemen, are you for a Party at Quadrille?

Col. I'll make one, with you three Ladies.

Lady Ans. I'll sit down, and be a Stander-by.

Lad Sm. [To Lady Answerall.] Madam, does
your Ladyship never play?

Col. Yes, I suppose, her Ladyship plays some.

times for an Egg at Easter.

Never. Ay, and a Kifs at Chrisimas.

Lady Anf. Come, Mr. Neverout, hold your Tongue, and mind your Knitting.

Aa 2

Nev:

Nev. With all my Heart. Kifs my Wife, and welcome.

[The Colonel, Mr. Neverout, Lady Smart, and Miss, go to Quadrille, and sit 'till Three in the Morning.] [They rise from Cards.]

Lady Sm. Well, Miss, you'll have a fad Hus-

band, you have fuch good Luck at Cards.

Nev. Indeed, Miss, you dealt me sad Cards; if you deal so ill by your Friends, what will you do with your Enemies?

Lady Ans. I'm fure, 'tis Time for all honest

Folks to go to Bed.

Miss. Indeed, my Eyes draw Straws. [she's

almost asleep.

Nev. Why, Miss, if you fall asleep, some Body may get a Pair of Gloves.

Col. I'm going to the Land of Nod.

Nev. Faith, I'm for Bedfordshire.

Lady Sm. I'm sure, I shall sleep without rocking.

Nev. Miss, I hope you'll dream of your Sweet-

heart.

.

Miss. O, no doubt of it: I believe, I shan't be able to sleep for dreaming of him.

Col. [To Miss.] Madam, I shall have the Ho-

nour to escorte you.

Miss. No, Colonel, I thank you. My Mama, has fent her Chair, and Footmen. Well, my Lady Smart, I'll give you Revenge whenever you please. [Footman comes in.]

Footman. Madam, the Chairs are waiting.

[They all take their Chairs, and go off.]

REMARKS

ONTHE

Barrier Treaty,

BETWEEN

HER MAJESTY

AND THE

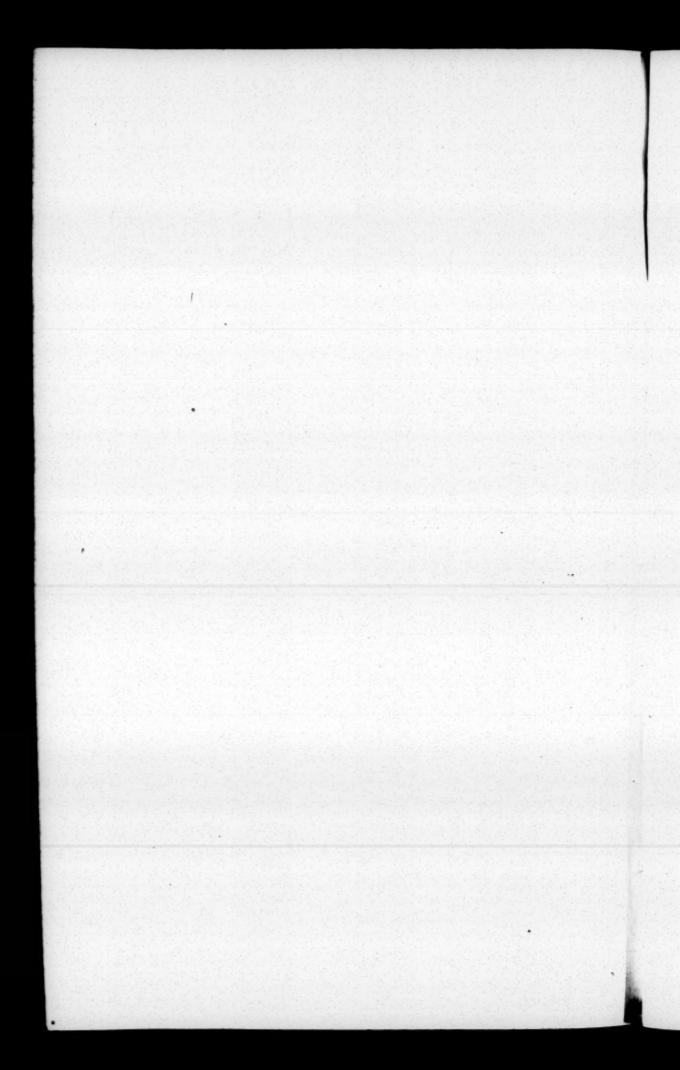
States-General.

To which are added.

The said BARRIER-TREATY, with the two separate Articles; Part of the Counter-Project; The Sentiments of Prince Eugene and Count Sinzendorf, upon the said Treaty: And a Representation of the English Merchants at Bruges.

Written in the YEAR, 1712.

DUBLIN:
Printed in the YEAR MDCCXXXVIII,





THE

PREFACE.

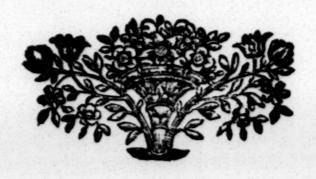
HEN I published the Discourse called,
The Conduct of the Allies, I had
Thoughts either of inserting or annexing the Barrier-Treaty at length, with
such Observations, as I conceived

night be useful for publick Information: But that Discourse taking up more Room than I designed, after my utmost Endeavours to abbreviate it, I contented my self only with making some sew Restections upon that samous Treaty; sufficient, as I thought, to answer the Design of my Book. I have since heard, that my Readers in general, seemed to wish I had been more particular, and have discovered an Impatience to have that Treaty made publick, especially since it hath been laid before the House of Commons.

That I may give some Light to the Reader, who is not well versed in these Affairs, he may please to know, that a Project for a Treaty of Barrier with the States, was transmitted hither from Holland; but being disapproved of by our Cours in several Parts,

The PREFACE.

a new Project, or Scheme of a Treaty, was drawn up here, with many Additions and Alterations. This last was called the Counter-Project; and was the Measure whereby the Duke of Marlborough and my Lord Townshend were commanded and instructed to proceed, in negotiating a Treaty of Barrier with the I have added a Translation of this Counter-Project, in those Articles where it differs from the Barrier - Treaty, that the Reader, by comparing them together, may judge how punctually those Negociators observed their Instructions. I have likewise subjoined the Sentiments of Prince Eugene of Savoy, and the Count de Sinzendorf, relating to this Treaty, written (I suppose) while it was negociating. And lastly, I have added a Copy of the Representation of the British Merchants at Bruges, signifying what Inconveniencies they already felt, and further apprehended, from this Barrier-Treaty.





SOME

REMARKS

ON THE

Barrier Treaty.



M A G I N E a reasonable Person in China; were reading the following Treaty, and one who was ignorant of our Affairs, or our Geography: He would conceive their High Mightinesses the States-Ge-

neral, to be some vast powerful Common-wealth, like that of Rome, and her Majesty to be a petty Prince, like one of those to whom that Republick would sometimes send a Diadem for a Present, when they behaved themselves well; otherwise could depose at Pleasure, and place whom they thought sit in his Stead. Such a Man would think, that the States had taken our Prince and Us into their Protection; and in Return, honoured us so far, as to make Use of our Troops as some small Assistance

Affistance in their Conquests, and the Enlargement of their Empire; or to prevent the Incursions of Barbarians upon some of their out-lying Provinces. But how must it found in an European Ear, that Great-Britain, after maintaining a War for fo many Years, with fo much Glory and Success. and fuch prodigious Expence; after faving the Empire, Holland, and Portugal, and almost recovering Spain, should, towards the Close of a War, enter into a Treaty with feven Dutch Provinces, to fecure to them a Dominion larger than their own, which she had conquered for them; to undertake for a great Deal more, without stipulating the least Advantage for her felf; and accept as an Equivalent. the mean Condition of those States affifting to preferve her Queen on the Throne, whom, by God's Affiftance, the is able to defend against all her Majesty's Enemies and Allies put together?

Such a wild Bargain could never have been made for Us, if the States had not found it their Interest to use very powerful Motives with the chief Advisers, (I say nothing of the Person immediately employed;) and if a Party here at home had not been resolved, for Ends and Purposes very well known, to continue the War as long as they had

any Occasion for it.

THE Counter-Project of this Treaty, made here at London, was bad enough in all Conscience: I have said something of it in the Preface: Her Majesty's Ministers were instructed to proceed by it in their Negociation. There was one Point in that Project, which would have been of Consequence to Britain, and one or two more, where the Advantages of the States were not so very exorbitant, and where some Care was taken of the House of Austria. Is it possible that our good Allies and Friends

could not be brought to any Terms with us, unless by striking out every Particular that might do Us any good, and adding still more to Them, where so much was already granted? For Instance, the Article about demolishing of Dunkirk, surely might have remained; which was of some Benefit to the States, as well as of mighty Advantage to Us; and which the French King hath lately yielded in one of his Preliminaries, although clogged with the Demand of an Equivalent, which will owe its

Difficulty only to this Treaty.

But, let me now confider the Treaty itself: Among the one and twenty Articles of which it. confifts, only two have any Relation to Us, importing, that the Dutch are to be Guarantees of our Succession, and are not to enter into any Treaty until the Queen is acknowledged by France. We know very well, that it is in Confequence the Interest of the States, as much as ours, that Britain should be governed by a Protestant Prince. fides, what is there more in this Guarantee, than in all common Leagues Offensive and Defensive between two Powers, where each is obliged to defend the other against any Invader, with all their Strength? Such was the Grand Alliance between the Emperor, Britain, and Holland, which was, or ought to have been, as good a Guarantee of our Succession, to all Intents and Purposes, as this in the Barrier-Treaty; and the mutual Engagements in fuch Alliances have been always reckoned sufficient, without any feparate Benefit to either Party.

It is, no doubt, for the Interest of Britain, that the States should have a sufficient Barrier against France: But their High Mightinesses, for some few Years past, have put a different Meaning upon the Word Barrier, from what it formerly used to bear, when

when applied to them. When the late King was Free of Orange, and commanded their Armies against France, it was never once imagined that any of the Towns taken, should belong to the Dutch; they were all immediately delivered up to their lawful Monarch; and Flanders was only a Barrier to Holland, as it was in the Hands of Spain rather than France. So in the Grand Alliance of 1701, the feveral Powers promising to endeavour to recover Flanders for a Barrier, was understood to be the recovering those Provinces to the King of Spain: But in this Treaty, the Style is wholly changed: Here are about twenty Towns and Forts of great Importance, with their Chatellanies and Dependencies (which Dependencies are likewise to be enlarged as much as possible) and the whole Revenues of them, to be under the perpetual Military Government of the Dutch, by which that Republick will be entirely Masters of the richest Part of all Flanders: And upon any Appearance of War, they may put their Garrisons into any other Place of the Low-Countries; and further, the King of Spain is to give them a Revenue of four hundred thousand Crowns a Year, to enable them to maintain those Garrisons.

Why should we wonder, that the Dutch are inclined to perpetuate the War, when, by an Article in this Treaty, the King of Spain is not to possess one single Town in the Low-Countries, until a Peace be made. The Duke of Anjou at the Beginning of this War, maintained six and thirty thousand Men out of those Spanish Provinces he then possessed:

To which if we add the many Towns since taken, which were not in the late King of Spain's Possession at the Time of his Death, with all their Territories and Dependencies; it is visible what Forces

Forces the States may be able to keep, even without any Charge to their peculiar Dominions.

THE Towns and Chatellanies of this Barrier, always maintained their Garrisons when they were in the Hands of France; and, as it is reported, returned a considerable Sum of Money into the King's Cosfers; yet the King of Spain is obliged by this Treaty (as we have already observed) to add, over and above, a Revenue of sour hundred thousand Crowns a Year. We know likewise, that a great Part of the Revenue of the Spanish Netberlands is already pawned to the States; so, that after a Peace, nothing will be left to the Sovereign, nor will the People be much eased of the Taxes they at present labour under.

Thus the States, by Virtue of this Barrier-Treaty, will, in Effect, be absolute Sovereigns of all Flanders, and of the whole Revenues in the utmost Extent.

AND here I cannot, without fome Contempt, take Notice of a Sort of Reasoning offered by several People; that the many Towns we have taken for the Dutch are of no Advantage, because the whole Revenues of those Towns are spent in maintaining them. For first, The Fact is manifestly false, particularly as to Liste, and some others: Secondly, The States, after a Peace, are to have four hundred thousand Crowns a Year out of the Remainder of Flanders, which is then to be left to Spain: And lastly, Suppose all these acquired Dominions will not bring a Penny into their Treafury; What can be of greater Consequence, than to be able to maintain a mighty Army out of their new Conquests; which before, they always did by taxing their natural Subjects?

How shall we be able to answer it to King

Charles III. that while we pretend to endeavour restoring him to the entire Monarchy of Spain, we join at the same Time with the Dutch, to deprive him of his natural Right to the Low-Countries?

But suppose, by a Dutch Barrier, must now be understood, only what is to be in Possession of the States; yet even under this Acceptation of the Word, nothing was originally meant except a Barrier against France; whereas several Towns demanded by the Dutch in this Treaty, can be of no Use at all in such a Barrier. And this is the Sentiment even of Prince Eugene himself (the present Oracle and Idol of the Party here) who fays, That Dendermond, Oftend, and the Caftle of Grand, do in no Sort belong to the Barrier, nor can be of other Uje than to make the States-General Masters of the Low-Countries, and binder their Trade with England. And further, That those who are acquainted with the Country, know very well, that Lier and Hate to fortifie, can give no Security to the States as a Barrier, but only raise a Jealousy in the People; shat these Places are only fortified in order to block up Bruffels, and the other great Towns of Brabant.

In those Towns of Flanders where the Dutch are to have Garrisons, but the Ecclesiastical and Civil Power to remain to the King of Spain after a Peace; the States have Power to send Arms, Ammunition, and Victuals, without paying Customs; under which Pretence, they will engross the whole Trade of those Towns, exclusive to all other Nations.

This, Prince Eugene likewise foresaw, and in his Observations upon this Treaty here annexed,

proposed a Remedy for it.

And if the Dutch shall please to think, that the whole Spanish Netherlands are not a sufficient Barrier for them, I know no Remedy from the Words

Of this Treaty, but that we must still go on, and Conquer for them as long as they please. For the QUEEN is obliged whenever a Peace is treated, to procure for them whatever shall be thought necessary besides; and where their Necessity will terminate,

is not very eafy to forefee.

Could any of her Majesty's Subjects conceive. that in the Towns we have taken for the Dutch, and given into their Possession as a Barrier, either the States should demand, or our Ministers allow, that the Subjects of Britain should, in Respect to their Trade, be used worse in those very Towns, than they were under the late King of Spain? Yet this is the Fact, as monttrous as it appears: All Goods going to, or coming from Newport or Oftend, are to pay the same Duties as those that pass by the Scheld under the Dutch Forts: And this, in Effect, is to shut out all other Nations from trading to Flanders. The English Merchants at Bruges complain, That after they have paid the King of Spain's Duty for Goods imported at Oftend, the same Goods are made liable to further Duties, when they are carried from thence into the Towns of the Dutch new Conquests; and desire only the same Privileges of Trade they had before the Death of the late King of Spain, Charles II. And in Confequence of this Treaty, the Dutch have already taken off eight per Cent. from all Goods they fend to the Spanish Flanders, but left it still upon Us.

But what is very furprizing; in the very fame Article where our good Friends and Allies are wholly shutting us out from trading in those Towns we have conquered for them with so much Blood and Treasure; the QUEEN is obliged to procure, that the States shall be used as favourably in their Trade over all the King of Spain's Dominions, as her

her own Subjects, or as the People most favoured. This I humbly conceive to be perfect Boys Play, Crose I win, and Pile you lose; or, What yours is mine, and what's mine is my own. Now if it should happen, that in a Treaty of Peace, some Ports or Towns should be yielded us for the Security of our Trade in any Part of the Spanish Dominions, at how great a Distance soever; I suppose, the Dutch would go on with their Boys Play, and challenge Half by Virtue of that Article: Or, would they be content with the Military Government and the Revenues, and reckon them among what shall be thought necessary for their Barrier?

This prodigious Article is introduced, as subsequent to the Treaty of Munster, made about the Year 1648, at a Time when England was in the utmost Consusion, and very much to our Disadvantage. Those Parts in that Treaty, so unjust in themselves, and so prejudicial to our Trade, ought in Reason, to have been remitted, rather than confirmed upon us for the Time to come: But this is Dutch Partnership, to share in all our beneficial Bargains, and exclude us wholly from theirs, even

from those which we have got for them.

In one Part of The Conduct of the Allies, &c. among other Remarks upon this Treaty, I make it a Question, whether it were right in Point of Policy or Prudence, to call in a foreign Power to be Guarantee to our Succession; because by that Means, we put it out of the Power of our Legislature to alter the Succession, how much soever the Necessity of the Kingdom may require it? To comply with the Cautions of some People, I explained my Meaning in the following Editions. I was affured, that my L—d C—f J—ce affirmed that Passage was Treason; one of my Answerers, I think,

think, decides as favourably; and I am told, that Paragraph was read very lately during a Debate. with a Comment in very injurious Terms, which, perhaps, might have been spared. That the Legislature should have Power to change the Succesfion, whenever the Necessities of the Kingdom require, is fo very useful towards preserving our Religion and Liberty, that I know not how to recant. The worst of this Opinion is, that at first Sight it appears to be Whiggish; but the Distinction is thus, The Whigs are for changing the Succession when they think fit, although the entire Legislature do not confent; I think it ought never to be done but upon great Necessity, and that with the Sanction of the whole Legislature. Do these Gentlemen of Revolution-Principles think it impossible, that we should ever have Occasion again to change our Succession? And, if such an Accident should fall out, must we have no Remedy, until the seven Provinces will give their Confent? Suppose that this virulent Party among us were as able, as some are willing, to raise a Rebellion for reinstating them in Power, and would apply themselves to the Dutch, as Guarantees of our Succession, to affift them with all their Force, under Pretence that the QUEEN and Ministry, a great Majority of both Houses, and the Bulk of the People were for bringing over France, Popery, and the Pretencer? Their High Mightinesses would, as I take it, be fole Judges of the Controversy, and probably decide it so well, that in some Time we might have the Happiness of becoming a Province to Holland. I am humbly of Opinion, that there are two Qualities necessary to a Reader, before his Judgment should be allowed; these are, common Honesty, and common Sense; and that no Man could have ВЬ misrepresented VOL. VI.

her own Subjects, or as the People most favoured. This I humbly conceive to be perfect Boys Play, Crose I win, and Pile you lose; or, What yours is mine, and what's mine is my own. Now if it should happen, that in a Treaty of Peace, some Ports or Towns should be yielded us for the Security of our Trade in any Part of the Spanish Dominions, at how great a Distance soever; I suppose, the Dutch would go on with their Boys Play, and challenge Half by Virtue of that Article: Or, would they be content with the Military Government and the Revenues, and reckon them among what shall be thought necessary for their Barrier?

This prodigious Article is introduced, as subsequent to the Treaty of Munster, made about the Year 1648, at a Time when England was in the utmost Consusion, and very much to our Disadvantage. Those Parts in that Treaty, so unjust in themselves, and so prejudicial to our Trade, ought in Reason, to have been remitted, rather than confirmed upon us for the Time to come: But this is Dutch Partnership, to share in all our beneficial Bargains, and exclude us wholly from theirs, even

from those which we have got for them.

In one Part of The Conduct of the Allies, &c. among other Remarks upon this Treaty, I make it a Question, whether it were right in Point of Policy or Prudence, to call in a foreign Power to be Guarantee to our Succession; because by that Means, we put it out of the Power of our Legislature to alter the Succession, how much soever the Necessity of the Kingdom may require it? To comply with the Cautions of some People, I explained my Meaning in the following Editions. I was affured, that my L—d C—f J—ce affirmed that Passage was Treason; one of my Answerers, I think,

think, decides as favourably; and I am told, that Paragraph was read very lately during a Debate. with a Comment in very injurious Terms, which, perhaps, might have been spared. That the Legislature should have Power to change the Succesfion, whenever the Necessities of the Kingdom require, is fo very useful towards preferving our Religion and Liberty, that I know not how to recant. The worst of this Opinion is, that at first Sight it appears to be Whiggish; but the Distinction is thus. The Whigs are for changing the Succession when they think fit, although the entire Legislature do not confent; I think it ought never to be done but upon great Necessity, and that with the Sanction of the whole Legislature. Do these Gentlemen of Revolution-Principles think it impossible, that we should ever have Occasion again to change our Succession? And, if such an Accident should fall out, must we have no Remedy, until the feven Provinces will give their Confent? Suppose that this virulent Party among us were as able, as fome are willing, to raise a Rebellion for reinstating them in Power, and would apply themselves to the Dutch, as Guarantees of our Succession, to affift them with all their Force, under Pretence that the QUEEN and Ministry, a great Majority of both Houses, and the Bulk of the People were for bringing over France, Popery, and the Pretencer? Their High Mightinesses would, as I take it, be fole Judges of the Controversy, and probably decide it fo well, that in some Time we might have the Happiness of becoming a Province to Holland. I am humbly of Opinion, that there are two Qualities necessary to a Reader, before his Judgment should be allowed; these are, common Honesty, and common Sense; and that no Man could have VOL. VI. ВЬ misrepresented

misrepresented that Paragraph in my Discourse, unless he were utterly destitute of one or both.

THE Presumptive Successor, and her immediate Heirs, have so established a Reputation in the World, for their Piety, Wisdom, and Humanity, that no Necessity of this Kind, is like to appear in their Days; but I must still insist, that it is a Diminution to the Independency of the Imperial Crown of Great-Britain, to call at every Door for Help to put our Laws in Execution: And we ought to consider, that if in Ages to come, such a Prince should happen to be in Succession to our Throne, who should be entirely unable to govern; that very Motive might encline our Guarantees to support him, the more effectually to bring the Rivals of their Trade into Consuson and Disorder.

But to return: The QUEEN is here put under the unreasonable Obligation of being Guarantee of the whole Barrier-Treaty, of the Dutch having Possession of the said Barrier, and the Revenues thereof, before a Peace; of the Payment of sour hundred thousand Crowns by the King of Spain; that the States shall possess their Barrier, even before King Charles is in Possession of the Spanish Necherlands: Although by the fifth Article of the Grand Alliance, her Majesty is under no Obligation to do any Thing of this Nature, except in a general Treaty.

ALL Kings, Princes, and States, are invited to enter into this Treaty, and to be Guarantees of its Execution. This Article, although very frequent in Treaties, feems to look very odly in that of the Barrier: Popich Princes are here invited among others, to become Guarantees of our Protestant Succession: Every petty Prince in Germany must be intreated to preserve the QUEEN of Great-Bri-

tain upon her Throne: The King of Spain is invited particularly and by Name, to become Guarantee of the Execution of a Treaty, by which his Allies, who pretend to fight his Pattles, and recover his Dominions, strip him in Effect of all his ten Provinces: A clear Reason why they never fent any Forces to Spain, and why the Obligation not to enter into a Treaty of Peace with France, until that entire Monarchy were yielded as a Preliminary, was ftruck out of the Counter-Project by the Dutch. They fought only in Flanders? because there they only fought for themselves. King Charles must needs accept this Invitation very kindly, and stand by with great Satisfaction, while the Belgick Lyon divides the Prey, and affigns it all to himself. I remember there was a Parcel of Soldiers who robbed a Farmer of his Poultry, and then made him wait at Table while they devoured his Victuals, without giving him a Morfel; and upon his Expostulating, had only for Answer, Why, Sirrah, are we not come here to protect you? And thus much for this generous Invitation to all Kings and Princes, to lend their Affistance, and become Guarantees, out of pure good Nature, for fecuring Flanders to the Dateb.

In the Treaty of Ryfwick, no Care was taken to oblige the French King to acknowledge the Right of Succession in her present Majesty; for Want of which Point being then settled, France resuled to acknowledge her for Queen of Great-Britain, after the late King's Death. This unaccountable Neglect (if it were a Neglect) is here called an Omission, and Care is taken to supply it in the next General Treaty of Peace. I mention this occasionally, because I have some stubborn Doubts within me, whether it were a wilful Omis-

fion or no. Neither do I herein reflect in the least upon the Memory of his late Majesty, whom I entirely acquit of any Imputation upon this Matter. But when I recollect the Behaviour, the Language, and the Principles of some certain Persons in those Days, and compare them with that Omission; I am tempted to draw some Conclusions which a certain Party would be more ready to call salse and

malicious, than to prove them fo.

I MUST here take Leave (because it will not otherwife fall in my Way) to fay a few Words in return to a Gentleman, I know not of what Character or Calling, who hath done me the Honour to write three Discourses against that Treatise of The Conduct of the Allies, &c. and promifes, for my Comfort, to conclude all in a Fourth. I pity Answerers with all my Heart, for the many Difadvantages they lie under. My Book did a World of Mischief (as he calls it) before his first Part could possibly come out; and so went on through the Kingdom, while his limped flowly after; and if it arrived at all, it was too late; for Peoples Opinions were already fixed. His Manner of anfwering me is thus: Of those Facts which he pretends to examine, some he resolutely denies, others he endeavours to extenuate, and the rest he distorts with such unnatural Turns, that I would engage by the fame Method, to disprove any History, either antient or modern. Then the Whole is interlarded with a thousand injurious Epithets and Appellations, which heavy Writers are forced to make Use ot, as a Supply for that Want of Spirit and Genius they are not born to: Yet, after all, he allows a very great Point for which I contend, confessing in plain Words, that the Burthen of the War hath chiefly lain upon Us; and think

think it sufficient for the Dutch, that, next to England, they have born the greatest Share. And is not this the great Grievance of which the whole Kingdom complains? I am inclined to think, that my Intelligence was at least as good as his; and fome of it, I can affure him, came from Persons of his own Party, although perhaps not altogether fo inflamed. Hitherto therefore, the Matter is pretty equal, and the World may believe him or me as they please. But, I think, the great Point of Controverfy between us, is, whether the Effects and Consequences of Things follow better from his Premifes or mine: And there I will not be fatished, unless he will allow the whole Advantage to be on my Side. Here is a flourishing Kingdom brought to the Brink of Ruin, by a most successful and glorious War of ten Years, under an able, diligent, and loyal Ministry; a most faithful, just, and generous Commander; and in Conjunction with the most hearty, reasonable, and sincere Allies: This is the Case, as that Author represents it. I have heard a Story, I think it was of the Duke of * *, who playing at Hazard at the Groom. Porters in much Company, held in a great many Hands together, and drew a huge Heap of Gold; but in the Heat of Play, never observed a Sharper, who came once or twice under his Arm, and fwept a great deal of it into his Hat: The Company thought it had been one of his Servants: When the Duke's Hand was out, they were talking how much he had won: Yes, faid he, I held in very long; yet, methinks, I have won but very little: They told him, his SERVANT had got the rest in his Hat; and then he found he was cheated.

. Ir hath been my good Fortune to fee the moth important Facts that I have advanced, justified by

the publick Voice; which let this Author do what he can, will incline the World to believe, that I may be right in the rest: And I solemnly declare, that I have not wilfully committed the least Mistake. I stopt the second Edition, and made all possible Enquiries among those who I thought could best inform me, in order to correct any Error I could hear of: I did the same to the third and south Editions, and then lest the Printer to his injecty. This I take for a more effectual Answer to all Cavils, than an hundred Pages of Controversy.

But what disgusts me from having any Thing to do with this Race of Answer-Jobbers, is, that they have no Sort of Conscience in their Dealings: To give one Instance in this Gentleman's third Part, which I have been lately looking into. When I talk of the most petty Princes, he says, I mean crowned Heads: When I say, the Soldiers of those petty Princes are ready to rob or starve at Home: He says, I call Kings and crowned Heads, Robbers and Highwaymen. This is what the

Whigs call answering a Book.

I CANNOT omit one Particular concerning this Author, who is so positive in afferting his own Facts, and contradicting mine; he affirms, that the Business of Thoulon was discovered by the Clerk of a certain Great Man, who was then Secretary of State. It is neither wife, nor for the Credit of his Party, to put us in Mind either of that Secretary, or of that Clerk; however, so it happens, that nothing relating to the Affair of Thoulon, did ever pass through that Secretary's Office: Which I here affirm, with great Phlegm, leaving the Epithets of salie, scandalous, villainous, and the rest, to the Author and his Fellows.

Bur to leave this Author; let us confider the Confequence of our Triumphs, upon which fome fet so great a Value, as to think that nothing less than the Crown can be a fufficient Reward for the Merit of the General. We have not enlarged our Dominions by one Foot of Land: Our Trade, which made us confiderable in the World, is either given up by Treaties, or clogged with Duties, which interrupt and daily leffen it: We fee the whole Nation groaning under excessive Taxes of all Sorts, to raise three Millions of Money for Payment of the Interest of those Debts we have contracted. Let us look upon the Reverse of the Medal, we shall see our Neighbours, who in their utmost Distress, called for our Assistance, become, by this Treaty, even in Time of Peace, Masters of a more confiderable Country than their own; in a Condition to strike Terror into us, with fifty thousand Veterans ready to invade us, from that Country which we have conquered for them; and to commit infolent Hostilities upon us, in all other Parts, as they have lately done in the East-Indies.

The BARRIER-TREATY between her Majesty and the States General.

The Lords the Queen of Great-Britain, and the Lords the States-General of the United Provinces, having considered how much it concerns the Quiet and the Security of their Kingdoms, and States, and the publick Tranquillity, to maintain and to secure on one Side the Succession to the Crown of Great-Britain, in such Manner as it is now established by the Laws of the Kingdom; and on the other Side, That the States-General of the United Provinces, should have a strong and sufficient Barrier against France.

France, and others, who would surprize or attack them: And her Majesty, and the said States-General apprehending, with just Reason, the Troubles and the Mischiefs which may happen, in relation to this Succession, if at any Time there should be any Person or any Power who should call it in Question; and that the Countries and States of the said Lords the States-General, were not furnished with such a Barrier. For these said Reasons, ber said Majesty the Queen of Great-Britain, although in the Vigour of ber Age, and enjoying perfect Health, (which may God preserve ber in many Years) out of an Effect of ber usual Prudence and Piety, has thought fit to enter, with the Lords the States-General of the United Provinces, into a particular Alliance and Confederacy; the principal End, and only Aim of which, Shall be the publick Quiet and Tranquillity; and to prevent, by Measures taken in Time, all the Events which might one Day excite new War. It is with this View, that her British Majesty has given her full Power to agree upon some Articles of a Treaty, in Addition to the Treaties and Alliances that she bath already with the Lords the States General of the United Provinces, to ber Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary, Charles Viscount Townshend. Baron of Lyn-Regis, Privy-Counsellor to ber British Majesty, Captain of ber said Majesty's Yeomen of the Guard, and ber Lieutenant in the County of Norfolk: And the Lords the States-General of the United Provinces, the Sicurs John de Welderen, Lord of Valburgh, Great Bayliff of the Lower Betuwe, of the Body of the Nobility of the Province of Guelder; Frederick Baron of Reede, Lord of Lier, St. Anthony and T'er Lee, of the Order of the Nobility of the Province of Holland and West Friezeland; Anthony Heinfius, Counsellor Pentionary of the Province of Holland and West-Friezeland. Keeper of the Great-Seal, and Super-Intendant of the Fiefs of the same Province; Cornelius Van Gneet, Lord of Spranbrock, Bulkeysteyn, &c. Gedeon Hoeuft, Canon of the Chapter of the Church of Si. Peter at Utrecht, and elected Counsellor in the States of the Province of Utrecht; Haffel Van Sminia, Secretary of the Chamber of the Accounts of the Province of Friezeland; Ernest Ittersum, Lord of Osterbof, of the Body of the Nobility of the Province of Overyssel; and Wicher Wichers, Senator of the City of Groningen; all Deputies to the Afsembly of the said Lords the States-General on the one Part, respectively of the Provinces of Guelder, Holland, Weit-Friezeland, Zeeland, Utrecht, Friezeland, Overyssel, and Groningen, and Ommelands, who, by Virtue of their full Powers, are agreed upon the following Articles.

ARTICLE I.

HE Treaties of Peace, Friendship, Alliance and Confederacy between her Britannick Majesty and the States-General of the United-Provinces, shall be approved and confirmed by the present Treaty, and shall remain in their former Force and Vigour, as if they were inserted Word for Word.

II. The Succession to the Crown of England having been settled by an Act of Parliament, passed the twelsth Year of the Reign of his late Majesty King William III. the Title of which is, An Act for the further Limitation of the Crown, and better securing the Rights and Liberties of the Subject: And lately, in the fixth Year of the Reign of her present Majesty, this Succession having been again

again established and confirmed by another A& made for the greater Security of her Majesty's Perion and Government, and the Succession to the Crown of Great-Britain, &c. in the Line of the most serene House of Hanover, and in the Person of the Princess Sophia, and of her Heirs, Succesfors, and Descendants, Male and Female, already born or to be born: And although no Power hath any Right to oppose the Laws made upon this Subject, by the Crown and Parliament of Great-Britain; if it shall happen, nevertheless, that under any Pretence, or by any Cause whatever, any Person, or any Power or State may pretend to dispute the Establishment which the Parliament hath made of the aforefaid Succession, in the most ferene House of Hanover, to oppose the said Succession, to assist or favour those who may oppose it, whether directly or indirectly, by open War, or by fomenting Seditions and Conspiracies against her, or him, to whom the Crown of Great-Britain shall descend, according to the Acts aforesaid; the States-General engage, and promife to affift and maintain, in the faid Succession, her, or him, to whom it shall belong, by Virtue of the said Acts of Parliament, to affift them in taking Poffession, if they should not be in actual Possession, and to oppose those who would disturb them in the taking fuch Possession, or in the actual Possession of the aforefaid Succession.

III. Her faid Majesty and the States-General, in Consequence of the fifth Article of the Alliance concluded between the Emperor, the late King of Great-Britain, and the States-General, the 7th of September 1701, will employ all their Force to recover the rest of the Spanish Low-Countries.

IV. And further, they will endeavour to con-

quer as many Towns and Forts as they can, in order to their being a Barrier and Security to the faid States.

V. And whereas, according to the ninth Article of the faid Alliance, it is to be agreed, amongst other Matters, how, and in what Manner the States shall be made safe by Means of this Barrier, the QUEEN of Great-Britain will use her Endeavours to procure, that in the Treaty of Peace it may be agreed, that all the Spanish Low-Countries, and what else may be found necessary, whether conquered or unconquered Places, shall serve as a Barrier to the States.

VI. THAT to this End, their High Mightinesfes shall have the Liberty to put and keep Garrison, to change, augment and diminish it as they shall judge proper, in the Places following: Namely, Newport, Furnes, with the Fort of Knocke, Ipres, Menin, the Town and Citadel of Lifle, Tourney and its Citadel, Conde, Valenciennes; and the Places which shall from henceforward be conquered from Maubeuge, Charleroy, Namur and its France. Citadel, Lire, Hale to Fortifie, the Ports of Perle, Philippe, Damme, the Castle of Gand, and Dendermonde; the Fort of St. Donas being joined to the Fortifications of the Sluce, and being entirely incorporated with it, shall remain and be yielded in Property to the States. The Fort of Rodenbuysen, on this Side Gand, shall be demolished.

VII. THE faid States-General may, in Case of an apparent Attack, or War, put as many Treeps as they shall think necessary, in all the Towns, Places, and Forts in the Spanish Low-Countries, where the Reason of War shall require it.

VIII. THEY may likewise send into the Towns, Forts and Places, where they shall have their Gar-

risons, without any Hindrance, and without paying any Duties, Provisions, Ammunitions of War, Arms and Artillery, Materials for the Fortifications, and all that shall be found convenient and necessary for the said Garrisons and Fortifications.

IX. The faid States-General shall also have Liberty to appoint in the Towns, Forts, and Places of their Barrier, mentioned in the foregoing sixth Article, where they may have Garrisons, such Governours and Commanders, Majors and other Officers, as they shall find proper, who shall not be subject to any other Orders, whatsoever they may be, or from whencesoever they may come, relating to the Security and Military Government of the said Places, but only to those of their High Mightinesses (exclusive of all others;) still preserving the Rights and Priviledges, as well Ecclesiastical as Political, of King Charles III.

X. THAT, besides, the States shall have Liberty to fortise the said Towns, Places, and Forts which belong to them, and repair the Fortisications of them, in such Manner as they shall judge necessary; and further, to do whatever shall be useful

for their Defence.

XI. It is agreed, that the States-General shall have all the Revenues of the Towns, Places, Jurisdictions, and their Dependencies, which they shall have for their Barrier from France, which were not in the Possession of the Crown of Spain, at the Time of the Death of the late King Charles II. and besides, a Million of Livres shall be settled for the Payment of one hundred thousand Crowns every three Months, out of the clearest Revenues of the Spaniso Low-Countries, which the said King was then in Possession of; both which are for maintaining the Garrisons of the States, and for supplying

fupplying the Fortifications, as also the Magazines, and other necessary Expences, in the Towns and Places abovementioned. And that the said Revenues may be sufficient to support these Expences, Endeavours shall be used for enlarging the Dependencies and Jurisdictions aforesaid, as much as possible; and particularly for including with the Jurisdiction of Ipres, that of Cassel, and the Forest of Niepe; and with the Jurisdiction of Lisle, the Jurisdiction of Douay, both having been so joined before the present War.

XII. THAT no Town, Fort, Place, or Country of the Spanish Low-Countries, shall be granted, transferred, or given, or descend to the Crown of France, or any of the Line of France, neither by Virtue of any Gift, Sale, Exchange, Marriage, Agreement, Inheritance, Succession by Will, or through Want of Will, from no Title whatsoever, nor in any other Manner whatever, nor be put into the Power, or under the Authority of the most Christian King, or any one of the Line of France.

XIII. AND whereas, the faid States-General, in Confequence of the ninth Article of the faid Alliance, are to make a Convention or Treaty with King Charles III. for putting the States in a Condition of Safety, by Means of the faid Barrier, the QUEEN of Great-Britain will do what depends upon her, that all the foregoing Particulars, relating to the Barrier of the States, may be inferted in the aforefaid Treaty or Convention; and that her faid Majesty will continue her good Offices, until the abovementioned Convention between the States and the faid King Charles III. be concluded, agreeably to what is beforementioned; and that her Majesty will be Guarantee of the faid Treaty or Convention.

XIV.

XIV. And that the faid States may enjoy from henceforward, as much as possible, a Barrier for the Spanish Low-Countries, they shall be permitted to put their Garrisons in the Towns already taken, and which may hereafter be so, before the Peace be concluded and ratissed. And in the mean Time, the said King Charles III. shall not be allowed to enter into Possession of the said Spanish Low-Countries, neither entirely nor in Part; and during that Time, the QUEEN shall assist their High Mightinesses to maintain them in the Enjoyment of the Revenues, and to find the Million of Livres a Year, above-mentioned.

XV. AND whereas, their High Mightinesses have stipulated by the Treaty of Munster, in the sourteenth Article, That the River Scheld, as also the Canals of Sas, Swan, and other Mouths of the Sea bordering thereupon, should be kept shut on

the Side of the States.

AND in the fifteenth Article, That the Ships and Commodities going in and coming out of the Harbours of Flanders, shall be and remain charged with all such Imposts and other Duties, as are raised upon Commodities going and coming along the Schell, and the other Canals above-mentioned:

THE QUEEN of Great-Britain promises and engages, That their High Mightinesses shall never be disturbed in their Right and Possession, in that Respect, neither directly nor indirectly; as also that the Commerce shall not, in Prejudice of the said Treaty, be made more easy by the Sea-Ports than by the Rivers, Canals and Mouths of the Sea, on the Side of the States of the United-Provinces, neither directly or indirectly.

And whereas, by the 16th and 17th Articles of the same Treaty of Munster, his Majesty the King

of Spain, is obliged to treat the Subjects of their High Mightinesses as favourably as the Subjects of Great-Britain, and the Hans Towns, who were then the People most favourably treated: Her Britannick Majesty and their High Mightinesses promise likewise, to take Care that the Subjects of Great-Britain, and of their High Mightinesses, shall be treated in the Spanish Low-Countries, as well as in Spain, the Kingdoms and States belonging to it, equally, and as well the one as the other, as the People most favoured.

XVI. THE faid QUEEN and States-General oblige themselves to surnish, by Sea and Land, the Succours and Assistance necessary to maintain, by Force, her said Majesty in the quiet Possession of her Kingdoms; and the most screne House of Hanover in the said Succession, in the Manner it is settled by the Acts of Parliament before-mentioned; and to maintain the said States-General in the Possession.

fession of the said Barrier.

XVII. AFTER the Ratifications of the Treaty, a particular Convention shall be made of the Conditions by which the said QUEEN, and the said Lords, the States-General, will engage themselves to furnish the Succours which shall be thought necessary, as well by Sea as by Land.

XVIII. If her *British* Majesty, or the States-General of the United-Provinces, be attacked by any Body whatsoever, by Reason of this Convention, they shall mutually assist one another with all their Forces, and become Guarantees of the Exe-

cution of the faid Convention.

XIX. THERE shall be invited and admitted into the present Treaty, as soon as possible, all the Kings, Princes and States, who shall be willing to enter into the same, particularly his Imperial Ma-

jesty,

jesty, the Kings of Spain and Prussia, and the Elector of Hanover. And her British Majesty, and the States-General of the United-Provinces, and each of them in particular, shall be permitted to require and invite those whom they shall think sit to require and invite, to enter into this Treaty,

and to be Guarantees of its Execution.

XX. AND as Time hath shewn the Omission which was made in the Treaty figned at Ryswick in the Year 1697, between England and France, in respect of the Right of the Succession of England, in the Person of her Majesty the QUEEN of Great-Britain, now reigning; and that for Want of having fettled in that Treaty, this indifputable Right of her Majesty, France refused to acknowledge her for QUEEN of Great-Britain, after the Death of the late King William III. of Glorious Memory: Her Majesty, the QUEEN of Great-Britain, and the Lords, the States-General of the United-Provinces, do agree and engage themselves likewise, not to enter into any Negociation or Treaty of Peace with France, before the Title of her Majesty to the Crown of Great-Britain, as also the Right of Succession of the most serene House of Hanover, to the aforesaid Crown, in the Manner it is fettled and established by the beforementioned Acts of Parliament, be fully acknowledged, as a Preliminary by France, and that France hath promifed at the same Time, to remove out of its Dominions, the Person who pretends to be King of Great-Britain; and that no Negociation. or formal Discussion of the Articles of the said Treaty of Peace shall be entered into, but jointly and at the same Time with the said QUEEN, or with her Ministers.

XXI. HER British Majesty, and the Lords the States-

States-General of the United-Provinces, shall ratifie and confirm all that is contained in the present Treaty, within the Space of sour Weeks, to be reckoned from the Day of the Signing. In Testimony whereof, the underwritten Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of her British Majesty, and the Deputies of the Lords the States-General have signed this present Treaty, and have affixed their Seals thereunto.

At the Hague, the 29th of Oct. in the Year 1709.

(L. S.) Townshend.

(L. S.) J. B. Van Reede.

(L. S.) G. Hoeuft.

(L. S.) E. V. Ittersum.

(L. S.) J. V. Welderen.

(L. S.) A. Heinfius.

(L. S.) H. Sminia.

(L.S.) W. Wichers.

The separate ARTICLE.

A S in the Preliminary Articles signed here at the Hague the 28th of May, 1709, by the Plenipotentiaries of his Imperial Majesty, of her Majesty the QUEEN of Great-Britain, and of the Lords the States-General of the United-Provinces, it is stipulated, amongst other Things, that the Lords the States-General shall have, with entire Property and Sovereignty, the Upper Quarter of Guelder, according to the sifty-second Article of the Treaty of Munster, of the Year 1648; as also, that the Garrisons which are, or hereafter shall be on the Part of the Lords the States-General in the Town of Huy, the Citadel of Liege, and in the Town of Bonne, shall remain, Vol. VI.

there, until it shall be otherwise agreed upon with his Imperial Majesty and the Empire. And, as the Barrier which is this Day agreed upon in the principal Treaty, for the mutual Guaranty between ber British Majesty and the Lords the States-General, cannot give to the United-Provinces the Safety for which it is established, unless it be well secured from one End to the other, and that the Communication of it be well joined together; for which the upper Quarter of Guelder, and the Garrisons in the Citadel of Liege, Huy and Bonne, are absolutely necessary: Experience baving thrice shewn, that France baving a Design to attack the United-Provinces, has made Use of the Places abovementioned, in order to come at them, and to penetrate into the faid Provinces. That further, in respect to the Equivalent for which the upper Quarter of Guelder is to be yielded to the United-Provinces, according to the fifty-second Article of the Treaty of Munster abovementioned, his Majesty King Charles III. will be much more gratified and advantaged in other Places, than that Equivalent can avail. So, that to the End, the Lords the States-General may have the upper Quarter of Guelder, with entire Property and Sovereignty; and that the said upper Quarter of Guelder may be yielded in this Manner to the faid Lords the States-General, in the Convention, or the Treaty that they are to make with bis Majesty King Charles III. according to the thirteenth Article of the Treaty concluded this Day; as also that their Garrisons in the Citadel of Liege, in that of Huy and in Bonne may remain there, until it be otherwise agreed upon with his Imperial Majesty and the Empire: Her Majesty the QUEEN of Great-Britain, engages ber felf, and promises by this separate Article, which shall have the same Force as if it were inserted in the principal Treaty, to make the fame

Jame Efforts for all this, as she hath engaged her self to make, for their obtaining the Barrier in the Spanish Low-Countries. In Testimony whereof, the underwritten Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of her British Majesty, and Deputies of the Lords the States-General, have signed the present separate Article, and have affixed their Seals thereunto.

At the Hague, the 29th of October 1709.

(L. S.) Townshend.

(L. S.) J. B. Van Reede.

(L. S.) G. Hoeuft.

(L. S.) E. V. Ittersum.

(L. S.) J. V. Welderen.

(L. S.) A. Heinfius.

(L. S.) H. Sminia.

(L. S.) W. Wichers.

The fecond separate ARTICLE.

A Sthe Lords the States-General have represented, That in Flanders, the Limits between Spanish Flanders, and that of the States, are settled in such a Manner, as that the Land belonging to the States is extremely narrow there; so that in some Places the Territory of Spanish Flanders extends itself to the Fortifications, and under the Cannon of the Places, Towns, and Forts of the States, which occasions many Inconveniencies, as both been seen by an Example a little before the Beginning of the present War, when a Fort was designed to have been built under the Cannon of the Sis Van Gand, under Pretence, that it was upon the Territory of Spain: And, as it is necessary for avoiding these and other Sorts of Inconveniences, that the Land of the States, upon the Cannon the Canno

Cc 2

fines of Flanders should be enlarged, and that the Places, Towns and Forts should, by that Means, be better covered: Her British Majesty, entering into the just Motives of the faid Lords the States-General in this Respect, promises and engages herself by this separate Article, That in the Convention that the faid Lords the States-General are to make with his Majesty, King Charles III. she will assist them, as that it may be agreed. That by the Ceffion to the faid Lords the States General, of the Property of an Extent of Land necessary to obviate such like and other Inconveniencies; their Limits in Flanders shall be enlarged more conveniently for their Security, and those of the Spanish Flanders removed farther from their Towns, Places and Forts, to the End, that thefe may not be so exposed any more. In Testimony whereof; the underwritten Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of ber British Majesty, and Deputies of the Lords the States-General, bave signed the present separate Article, and have affixed their Seals thereunio.

At the Hague, the 29th of October, 1709.

(L. S.) Townshend.

(L. S.) J. B. Van Reede.

(L. S.) A. Heinfius.

(L. S.) G. Hocuft.

(L. S.) H. Sminia.

(L. S.) E. V. Itterfum.

The Articles of the Counter-Project, which were struck out or altered by the Dutch, in the BARRIER-TREATY: With some Remarks.

ARTICLE VI.

have Power to put and keep Garrisons in the following Places, viz. Newport, Knock, Menin, the Citadel of Lifle, Tournay, Conde, Valenciennes, Namur and its Citadel, Liere, Hale to Fortifie, the Fort of Perle Damme, and the Castle of Gand.

Remarks. In the Barrier-Treaty, the States added the following Places to those mentioned in this Article, viz. Furnes, Ipres, Towns of Lisle, Maubeuge, Charleroy, Philippe, Fort of St. Donas (which is to be in Property to the States) and the Fort of Rodenbuysen, to be demolished. To say nothing of the other Places, Dendermond is the Key of all Brabant; and the demolishing of the Fort of Rodenbuysen, situate between Gand and Sas van Gand, can only serve to defraud the King of Spain of the Duties upon Goods imported and exported there.

Article VII. THE faid States may put into the faid Towns, Forts and Places, and in Case of open War with France, into all the other Towns, Places and Forts, whatever Troops the Reason of War shall require.

Remarks. But in the Barrier-Treaty it is fail, in Case of an apparent Attack or War, without specifying against France: Neither is the Number of Troops limited to what the Reason of War shall require, but what the States shall think necessary.

Article IX. Besides fome smaller Differences,

ends with a Salvo, not only for the Ecclesiastical and Civil Rights of the King of Spain, but likewise for his Revenues in the said Towns, which Revenues in the Barrier-Treaty, are all given to the States.

Article XI. THE Revenues of the Chattellanies and Dependencies of the Towns and Places, which the States shall have for their Barrier against France, and which were not in Possession of the Crown of Spain, at the late King of Spain's Death, shall be settled to be a Fund for maintaining Garrisons, and providing for the Fortifications and Magazines, and other necessary Charges of the said Towns of the Barrier.

Remarks. I DESIRE the Reader to compare this with the eleventh Article of the Barrier-Treaty, where he will fee how prodigiously it is enlarged.

Article XIV. ALL this is to be without Prejudice to such other Treaties and Conventions as the QUEEN of Great-Britain, and their High Mightinesses, may think fit to make for the future with the said King Charles III. relating to the said Spanish Netherlands, or to the said Barrier.

Article XV. AND to the End that the faid States may enjoy, at present, as much as it is possible a Barrier in the Spanish Netherlands, they shall be permitted to put their Garrisons in the chief Towns already taken, or that may be taken,

before a Peace be made.

Remarks. These two Articles are not in the Barrier-Treaty, but two others in their Stead; to which I refer the Reader. And indeed, it was highly necessary for the Dutch to strike out the former of these Articles, when so great a Part of the Treaty is so highly and manifestly prejudicial to Great-Britain, as well as to the King of Spain; especially,

especially in the two Articles inserted in the Place of these, which I desire the Reader will examine.

Article XX. AND whereas by the fifth and ninth Articles of the Alliance between the Emperor, the late King of Great-Britain, and the States-General, concluded the 7th of September 1701, it is agreed and stipulated, that the Kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, with all the Dependencies of the Crown of Spain in Italy, shall be recovered from the Possession of France, as being of the last Consequence to the Trade of both Nations, as well as the Spanish Netherlands, for a Barrier for the States-General; therefore the faid QUEEN of Great-Britain, and the States-General, agree and oblige themselves, not to enter into any Negociation or Treaty of Peace with France, before the Restitution of the said Kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, with all the Dependencies of the Crown of Spain and Italy, as well as the Spanish Low-Countries, with the other Towns and Places in the Poffession of France, abovementioned in this Treaty; and also after the Manner specified in this Treaty; as likewise all the rest of the entire Monarchy of Spain, be yielded by France as a Preliminary.

Article XXII. And whereas Experience hath shewn, of what Importance it is to Great-Britain, and the United-Provinces, that the Fortress and Port of Dunkirk should not be in the Possession of France, in the Condition they are at present; the Subjects of both Nations having undergone such great Losses, and suffered so much in their Trade, by the Prizes taken from them by Privateers set out in that Port; insomuch, that France, by her unmeasurable Ambition, may be always tempted to make some Enterprizes upon the Territories of the QUEEN of Great-Britain and their High

Mightineffes

Mightinesses, and interrupt the publick Repose and Tranquility; for the Preservation of which, and the Balance of Europe against the exorbitant Power of France, the Allies engaged themselves in this long and burthensome War; therefore the said QUEEN of Great-Britain, and their High Mightinesses, agree and oblige themselves, not to enter into any Negociation or Treaty of Peace with France, before it shall be yielded and stipulated by France as a Preliminary, that all the Fortifications of the said Town of Dunkirk, and the Forts that depend upon it, be entirely demolished, and razed, and that the Port be entirely ruined, and rendered impracticable.

Remarks. These two Articles are likewise omitted in the Barrier-Treaty; whereof the first regards particularly the Interests of the House of Austria; and the other about demolishing Dunkirk, those of Great-Britain. It is something strange, that the late Ministry, whose Advocates raise such a Clamour about the Necessity of recovering Spain from the House of Bourbon, should suffer the Dutch to strike out this Article; which, I think, clearly shews, the Reason why the States never troubled themselves with the Thoughts of reducing Spain, or even recovering Milan, Naples, and Sieily, to the Emperor; but were wholly fixed upon the Conquest of Flanders, because they had determined those Provinces as a Property for themselves.

As for the Article about demolishing of Dunkirk, I am not at all surprized to find it struck out; the Destruction of that Place, although it would be useful to the States, doth more nearly import Britain, and was therefore a Point, that such Ministers

could more eafily get over.

The Sentiments of Prince Eugene of Savoy, and of the Count de Sinzendorf, relating to the Barrier of the States-General, to the upper Quarter of Guelder, and to the Towns of the Electorate of Cologn, and of the Bishoprick of Liege.

A LTHOUGH the Orders and Instructions of the Courts of Vienna and Barcelona, upon the Matters above-mentioned, do not go fo far, as to give Directions for what follows; notwithstanding, the Prince and Count above-mentioned, considering the present State of Assairs, are of the

following Opinion.

FIRST, That the Counter-Project of England. relating to the Places where the States-General may put and keep Garrisons, ought to be followed, except Lier, Halie to Fortify, and the Castle of Gand. Provided likewise, that the Sentiments of England be particularly conformed to, relating to Dendermond and Oftend, as Places in no wife belonging to the Barrier; and which, as well as the Castle of Gand, can only ferve to make the States-General Masters of the Low-Countries, and hinder Trade with England. And as to Lier and Halle, those who are acquainted with the Country, know, that these Towns cannot give any Security to the States-General, but can only make People believe that these Places being fortified, would rather serve to block up Brussels, and the other great Cities of Brabant.

SECONDLY, As to what is faid in the seventh Article of the Counter-Project of England, relating to the Augmentation of Garrisons, in the Towns of the Barrier, in Case of an open War; this is agreeable to the Opinions of the said Prince and Count;

Count; who think likewise, that there ought to be added to the eighth Article, That no Goods or Merchandize should be sent into the Towns where the States-General shall have Garrisons, nor be comprehended under the Names of such Things, as the said Carrisons and Fortistications shall have need of. And that to this End, the said Things shall be inspected in those Places where they are to pass; as likewise, the Quantity shall be settled that the

Garrifons may want.

THIRDLY, As to the ninth Article, relating to the Governors and Commanders of those Towns, Forts, and Places where the States-General shall have their Garrisons; the faid Prince and Count are of Opinion, that the faid Governors and Commanders, ought to take an Oath, as well to the King of Spain, as to the States-General: But they may take a particular Oath to the latter, That they will not admit foreign Troops without their Confent; and that they will depend exclusively upon the faid States, in whatever regards the Military Power. But at the fame Time, they ought exclusively to promise the King of Spain, That they will not intermeddle in the Affairs of Law, civil Power, Revenues, or any other Matters, Ecclefiaftical or Civil, unless at the Desire of the King's Officers, to affift them in the Execution: In which Case, the said Commanders should be obliged not to refuse them.

FOURTHLY, As to the tenth Article, there is nothing to be added, unless that the States-General may repair and encrease the Fortifications of the Towns, Places, and Forts where they shall have their Garrisons; but this at their own Expence. Otherwise, under that Pretext, they might

feize all the Revenues of the Country.

FIFTHLY,

FIFTHLY, As to the eleventh Article, they think the States ought not to have the Revenues of the Chattellanies and Dependencies of these Towns and Places which are to be their Barrier against France; this being a Sort of Sovereignty, and very prejudicial to the Ecclesiastical and Civil Oeconomy of the Country. But the said Prince and Count are of Opinion, that the States-General ought to have, for the Maintenance of their Garrifons, and Fortifications, a Sum of Money of a Million and a Half, or two Millions of Florins, which they ought to receive from the King's Officers, who shall be ordered to pay that Sum before any other Payment.

SIXTHLY, And the Convention which shall be made, on this Affair, between his Catholick Majesty and the States-General, shall be for a limited

Time.

THESE are the utmost Conditions to which the faid Prince and Count think it possible for his Catholick Majesty to be brought; and they declare at the same Time, that their Imperial and Catholick Majesties will sooner abandon the Low-Countries, than take them upon other Conditions, which would be equally expensive, shameful, and

unacceptable to them.

On the other Side, the faid Prince and Count are persuaded, that the Advantages at this Time yielded to the States-General, may hereafter be very prejudicial to themselves, forasmuch as they may put the People of the Spanish Netherlands to some dangerous Extremity, considering the Antipathy between the two Nations; and, that extending of Frontiers, is entirely contrary to the Maxims of their Government.

As to the upper Quarter of Guelder, the faid Prince and Count are of Opinion, that the States-General may be allowed the Power of putting in Garrisons into Venlo, Ruremond, and Steffenswaert, with Orders to furnish the said States with the Revenues of the Country, which amount to one hundred thousand Florins.

As to Bonn, belonging to the Electorate of Cologn, Liege, and Huy, to the Bishoprick of Liege; it is to be understood, that these being Imperial Towns, it doth not depend upon the Emperor to consent, that foreign Garrisons should be placed in them upon any Pretence whatsoever, But whereas, the States-General demand them only for their Security, it is proposed, to place in those Towns a Garrison of Imperial Troops, of whom the States may be in no Suspicion, as they might be of a Garrison of an Elector, who might possibly have Views opposite to their Interests. But this is proposed only in Case that it shall not be thought more proper to raze one or other of the said Towns.

The Representation of the English Merchants at Bruges, relating to the Barrier-Treaty.

DAVID WHITE, and other Merchants, her Manjesty's Subjects residing at Bruges, and other Towns in Flanders, erave Leave humbly to represent.

Mennin, Douay, and other new Conquests in Flanders and Ariois, taken from the French this War, by the united Forces of her Majesty, and her Allies, are now become entirely under the Government of the States-General; and that we her Majesty's

Majesty's Subjects may be made liable to such Duties and Impositions on Trade, as the said States-General shall think fit to impose on us: We humbly hope and conceive, that it is her Majesty's Intention and Defign, that the Trade of her Dominions and Subjects, which is carried on with these new Conquests, may be on an equal Foot with that of the Subjects and Dominions of the States-General, and not be liable to any new Duty. when transported from the Spanish Netherlands, to the faid new Conquests; as, to our great Surprize, is exacted from us on the following Goods, viz. Butter, Tallow, Salmon, Hides, Beef, and all other Product of her Majesty's Dominions, which we import at Oftend, and there pay the Duty of Entry to the King of Spain, and consequently ought not to be liable to any new Duty, when they carry the fame Goods, and all others from their Dominions, by a free Pass or Transire, to the faid new Conquests: And we are under Apprehension, that if the said new Conquests be settled. or given entirely into the Possession of the States-General for their Barrier, (as we are made believe by a Treaty lately made by her Majesty's Ambas-Sador, the Lord Viscount Townshend, at the Hague) that the faid States-General may also soon declare all Goods and Merchandizes which are contraband in their Provinces, to be also contraband or prohibited in these new Conquests, or new Barrier, by which her Majesty's Subjects will be deprived of the Sale and Confumption of the following Products of her Majesty's Dominions, which are, and have long been, declared contraband in the United Provinces, fuch as English and Scotch Salt, Make Spirits, or Corn Brandy, and all other Sorts of distilled English Spirits, Whale and Rape Oil, &c.

IT is therefore humbly conceived, that her Majefty, out of her great Care and gracious Concern for the Benefit of her Subjects and Dominions. may be pleafed to direct, by a Treaty of Commerce, or some other Way, that their Trade may be put on an equal Foot in all the Spanish Netherlands, and the new Conquests of Barrier, with the Subjects of Holland, by paying no other Duty than that of Importation to the King of Spain; and by a Provision, that no Product of her Majesty's Dominions shall ever be declared contraband in these new Conquests, except such Goods as were esteemed contraband before the Death of Charles II. King of Spain. And it is also humbly prayed, that the Product and Manufacture of the new Conquests may also be exported without paying any new Duty, besides that of Exportation at Oftend, which was always paid to the King of Spain; it being impossible for any Nation in Europe to affort an entire Cargoe for the Spanish West-Indies, without a confiderable Quantity of feveral of the Manufactures of Lifle, such as Caradoros, Cajant, Picofes, Boratten, and many other Goods, &c.

THE chief Things to be demanded of France are, to be exempted from Tonnage, to have a Liberty of importing Herrings, and all other Fish to France, on the same Terms as the Dutch do, and as was agreed by them at the Treaty of Commerce immediately after the Treaty of Peace at Ryswick. The enlarging her Majesty's Plantations in America, &c. is naturally recommended.

